

1578/3125

L E S S O N S  
OF A  
G O V E R N E S S  
TO HER  
P U P I L S.

OR,

JOURNAL of the Method adopted by Madame de  
SILLERY-BRULART, (formerly Countess de  
GENLIS) in the Education of the Chil-  
dren of M. D'ORLEANS, First Prince  
of the BLOOD-ROYAL.

PUBLISHED BY HERSELF.

*TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH.*

---

V O L I.

---

DUBLIN;

Printed for Messrs. P. WOGAN, P. BYRNE, A. GRÜEBER,  
W. Mc. KENZIE, J. MOORE, J. JONES, W. JONES,  
R. Mc. ALLISTER, H. COLBERT, and J. RICE,

---

M.DCC.XCIII.





---

## P R E F A C E\*.

---

**I**N my discourse on the Education of the Dauphin, I have said, that, if a free nation have a right to demand a public account from the different branches of the administration, the information it may require on so interesting a subject as the education of the prince by whom it is one day to be governed, ought by no means to be withheld. This confide-

\* This preface was sent to the press a fortnight previous to the King's flight, and as it was then ready to be printed off, no alteration was made in it. The Editor has merely added this note.

ration led me to propose, 1. That the plan of his education should be printed and made public. 2. That the governor, from the moment the prince was entrusted to his care, should write a Journal of the Education of the Dauphin, to be printed and published monthly; and that this Journal should give an account of the subjects chosen for reading, the progress of the Dauphin in his studies and bodily exercises, the increase of his physical powers, the extracts made for him, together with the critical and moral reflections of his tutors. This is what I demanded for the public; and I farther desired that the governor should write a private Journal, not to be printed, but to be read only by his pupil, and by the King and the Queen; and, when the education should be finished, to be deposited in the charge of a tribunal appointed for that purpose. In my Discourse I have expatiated largely on the advantages that would accrue from this method; but as the plan is altogether new, it has been asserted by some to be absolutely *impracticable*. Hereafter it will be reflected upon and examined; many citizens will undoubtedly adopt as much of it as is applicable to the education of persons in private life \*, and it will at last be found that the

\* For example, *the private Journal*, giving an account of the good and bad actions of the pupil, with the governor's remarks; a journal written solely for the pupil and his father and mother, and which ought to be read by him every day. In the Discourse above mentioned, I have expressed my surprise that an idea so simple should be wholly new. Men always demand from an agent or steward a full and minute account; and a father has never yet required from the tutor he has chosen a similar *daily account*, from which

# P R E F A C E.

v

the idea is equally simple and useful. When I suggested the idea of a *private Journal*, I had kept one myself: the one which I wished might be made in the education of the Dauphin, I did not propose should be published, but I now publish mine. Meanwhile I confess that a work of this nature ought not to appear in print, unless there are very strong reasons for it, and that many inconveniencies would result from writing it with this view: not that I think it possible for a preceptor, even in this case, to violate the truth, for this would be suspecting him of the design of corrupting his pupil, and degrading his own character in his eyes; not that I believe a child properly educated, and consequently watched over with extreme vigilance, capable of committing faults so great that we should blush to publish them; but because the work being intended for the public eye, would lay the governor under restraint, would induce him to suppress many necessary details, would prevent him from saying the whole truth, though he might avoid direct falsehood, would give him a tone more suited to the taste of the public, than calculated to work upon the feelings and conviction of his pupil, as he would write with more care and correctness, and of consequence with less simplicity and

which he might obtain a knowledge of the character, genius, faults, virtues and natural inclinations of his children, together with the manner of thinking and acting of the governor; for verbal accounts are always vague, inaccurate, and superficial, paint nothing, and scarcely impart a few obscure notions on subjects with which it is of importance to be intimately acquainted.

energy; to set off his pupil to advantage, he would be more diffuse on his good actions than on his faults; elegance of style and a thousand trifles of pure convention would occupy too much of his attention; in fine, he would speak like an author, whereas the pure and simple language of a father and a friend, severe and affectionate by turns, is alone capable of making a deep impression on the heart of a child. It was in this manner I wrote the annexed Journal. I was certainly far from supposing that it would ever see the light, and of this no one who reads it can doubt. I ought however to say, that from the 2d of April 1790, a confused idea presented itself that I might one day be obliged to produce this irrefragable proof of the purity of my intentions and conduct: but to this sort of demonstration I felt the utmost repugnance, nor did I resolve upon it till toward the close of March last, the cruel period which gave me so much uneasiness. The truth then is, that for about a year only I wrote this Journal with the vague idea that on some future day I might possibly publish it; but it was rather a presentiment than a design; and had it even been a fixed resolution, I could not have changed the tone to which I had for so many years accustomed myself with my pupils, I could not have laid aside the pleasing habit of speaking to them from the real feelings of my heart, and I could have added nothing to the principles which I had already given them.

Persecuted for two years in a manner that is without example, I have but one sure way of confounding

confounding the malice of my enemies and refuting their absurd calumnies; that of presenting the public with a faithful picture of my conduct. During the reign of despotism, error, and prejudice, I was entrusted with the education of three princes of the blood-royal: it will be seen what principles I at that time inculcated on them, and of consequence, whether the sentiments I now profess originate from a spirit of party, and a desire of pleasing the multitude. Compelled to justify myself from numerous accusations, vague it is true, but highly injurious, which have been disseminated with considerable artifice, I cannot but produce every thing that is calculated to accomplish the end I have in view. Near the conclusion of this volume will be found a concise relation of a few of the troubles that for the last eighteen months I have experienced. I shall exhibit only facts supported by indisputable proofs: meanwhile, I will not say all that is in my power to say; but will publish merely what is necessary to my own justification, and will speak only of things to which my pupils were witnesses, or of which M. d'Orleans himself thought proper to inform me. The Journal from which the annexed Lessons are taken forms a very large bound volume; all the pages of which are numbered, and follow each other without any break. It is all in my own hand-writing, and contains the original signatures of my pupils. This work I have deposited with a notary\*, who will shew it to any pecep-

\* M. Gabien, Notary, Rue de Richelieu, No. 39.

tor † that wishes to compare it with the printed volume ; this may be easily done, as all the passages extracted are marked in the margin with perpendicular lines‡. I publish only fragments of this work, because it was impossible to present to the public a multitude of reprimands relating merely to the children's studies, and an infinity of minute details, lessons on politeness, the forms of society, &c. &c. I have selected, however, a few passages of this nature, to give an idea of the vigilance and scrupulous attention with which I watched over the children entrusted to my care. Thanks to the happy disposition of my pupils, I have never experienced the chagrin of writing an account in this Journal of one action truly vicious ; their faults have been such only as are common to all children, however well born : meanwhile, I have inserted in the printed fragments every thing I had to allege against them, at least all their serious faults, that I might be able to assert with truth, that not a single thing of this kind has been suppressed. It will be thought that I have frequently reprov'd them with extreme severity, and that I have sometimes affixed too much importance to trivial errors : but my design was, to shew them that the smallest faults may have serious consequences ; and the truly maternal affection I felt for them exaggerated

† I have only excepted certain persons, whose names I have given, who cou'd wish to see the manuscript for no other purpose but to tear out the leaves.

‡ These lines I was obliged to make as a guide to the copyist.



these consequences in my eyes. I have sometimes written under very painful feelings, and my vexation has communicated itself to my reproofs; but these reproofs, even when I was least on my guard, all came from the heart; and as my pupils were sure that they were not dictated by pedantry or caprice, they always produced the effect I desired. The reader must not be astonished to find the style of this work extremely negligent, and frequently very incorrect, since it was each day written with rapidity, and in haste, and was not intended for the press. I might have made some corrections in this respect, faithfully preserving the sense, and pointing out the alterations in notes: but this would have delayed its publication; and I was desirous it should appear as soon as possible. I can thus with truth assert, that these fragments have been copied with scrupulous exactness from my manuscript Journal, without my having altered a single word.

Even my enemies are forced to confess, what indeed twelve years seclusion from the world will not permit them to deny, that I have devoted myself entirely to my pupils, and that they have derived from my cares instruction and talents. These are facts of which my pupils are themselves the proofs. It is farther confessed, that they have received from me sound principles of religion and morality. My happy success in the education of the first pupils that nature committed to my charge, the irreproachable conduct and severe manners of



M. de Chartres, and the works I have at different times published, rendered it impossible to refuse me this justice. What more honourable or more glorious testimony can a preceptor desire? And ought he not to be satisfied when his most cruel enemies cannot withhold this? Yet, while they confess these truths, they assert that I have been guilty of *very heinous faults*. What are these faults? They are as follow\*:

1. It has been imputed to me, *that I have given my pupils a love of the new constitution*. Their love was voluntary, because the education they received taught them to pity the oppressed people; to detest arbitrary power, and all the abuses of the old form of government; to despise ostentation and empty distinctions not founded on personal merit; and lastly, to hold sacred and inviolable every engagement, public or private, and consequently a solemn oath pronounced in the face of a whole nation. Beside, their respect for the King could not fail to strengthen their love for the constitution of which he avowed him-

\* I shall only mention, as may be supposed, the reports that have been propagated, and made the subject of common discourse in a certain class of society, without noticing the silly and ridiculous calumnies published in the libellous paper of M. Cantier and in other journals of a similar kind. If they dared print at length the surnames of those whom they cowardly and impudently attack, instead of pointing them out by initials, by christian names, or names of their own invention, they might be brought to justice, and punished as villains and libellers: but certainly no person will so far degrade himself as to think it necessary to refute such writings.

self

self the head. It is true they have heard it said, by some enemies of the revolution, that the King did not consider his oath as binding, because necessity compelled him to take it. But can we ascribe to compulsion the various steps to which the King was prompted solely by the suggestions of his own mind, that delightful speech † which he came of his own accord to deliver to the National Assembly; and that energetic letter, in which he expresses in such strong terms his inviolable attachment to the constitution, and his profound indignation against those who wish to overturn it? But supposing, which these facts contradict, that the King had not acted voluntarily, and that at heart he regretted the loss of arbitrary power, would what he has done be less obligatory? Certainly not, since he has given his sacred

† In this speech, which is full of candour and sensibility, we find the following passage: 'I will defend and maintain that constitutional liberty, the principles of which the general wish according with my own has rendered sacred. I will do more, in concert with the Queen, who partakes my sentiments; I will early prepare the heart of my son to pursue that new order of things which circumstances have produced. I will habituate him from his childhood to rejoice at the happiness of France; and ever to acknowledge, in despite of the language of parasites, that a wise constitution will preserve him from the dangers of experience; and that true liberty adds increasing value to the sentiments of love and fidelity, of which the nation, during a succession of ages, has given its kings such affecting proofs.'—To doubt the sincerity of the King, after such protestations voluntarily made, would be at once to calumniate and insult him, and to accuse him of a cowardice and perfidy so much the more inconceivable, as in this and other instances, in which he acted with such true dignity, nothing was required of him, and there was no sort of compulsion.

promise,

promise, and the nation has received it. But it is said, *if an oath be forced from us ; if the heart disown it, the lips pronounce it in vain, it is null.* Horrible maxim ! What would become of society, if its laws, though less rigid than those of honour, did not reprobate it \* ? What perjuries might not be pardoned, if it were sufficient to say, *I promised against my will ; my oath was extorted from me by necessity, or dictated by my regard for the public good ; I thought I should prevent by it considerable evils, bloodshed, and murder ; and humanity will be an excuse for perjury in my entering into this engagement ?* If we suppose it allowable to commit a crime from the hope, or even with the certainty of effecting a good, we overturn all the supports of morality ; we substitute arbitrary inventions for eternal principles ; circumstances alone will determine the merit or the infamy of actions ; and imposture, revenge, and ferocity will often impudently claim the recompense of virtue. Such are the ideas I have instilled into my pupils ; and in their eyes nothing can alter the nature of a vice. Instead of extolling to them in the page of history those crimes productive of benefits, those splendid actions which justice and humanity reprobate, it was my endeavour to preserve them from this

\* It is true that an engagement, signed by a man in chains, is not valid ; but if, when set at liberty, he does not fulfil it, he disgraces himself, and the law, the protector of the weak, gives him this shameful privilege only when the violence is positive, and the captivity absolute, only when he is confined in a prison under the guard of jailors.

superstitious respect, founded on prejudices, more dangerous and absurd than that which elevated rank and an illustrious name inspire. I never wished them to admire Horatius murdering his sister, Brutus assassinating Cæsar, Timoleon slaying his brother, and all those monstrous excesses, induced by great motives, but not on that account less execrable crimes. In fine, I did not think it necessary to sow the seeds of ferociousness in their minds, in order to inspire them with elevated sentiments; for, in my opinion, true grandeur is inseparable from virtue, that is, from the happy assemblage of good faith, justice, and humanity. Thus, in reading the history of France, I remarked to my pupils that posterity, the equitable judge of the characters of princes, places in the list of our good kings a weak, unfortunate monarch, of slender abilities, but who was distinguished for his rectitude and sincerity\*; while it has branded with eternal opprobrium the splendid name of the Restorer of Letters, because he was intolerant, because he lighted up the fire of persecution, and broke a treaty which he had sworn to observe; yet this treaty (the treaty of Madrid) was concluded in a prison. Francis the First experienced all the horrors of close captivity; to emancipate himself from his chains, he signed an engagement which

\* King John. It was he who said, that *if truth were banished from the earth, it ought to be found in the mouth of kings*: a royal prerogative that would certainly not be less noble than any of those which pride arrogates to itself.

his heart disavowed. By this deceitful and cowardly action he regained his liberty, but for ever forfeited his honour; he ceased to be an honest man, and was no longer reckoned in the number of our great kings. Having been taught such principles and reflections, is it possible for my pupils to believe that the monarch, after solemnly swearing to maintain the new laws, can be their secret enemy? The probity, character, and behaviour of the King, all serve to warrant his sincerity.—Abstracting from individual opinions, let us consider for a moment what was the best and wisest conduct to be adopted by the spectators of the revolution, that is, by persons whose age or condition took from them the right of co-operating in it. Ought they to have declared themselves adverse to the general opinion of the whole nation, approved by its king? There were no means of direct and open opposition; there was nothing left but the vile resources of conspiracy and intrigue. An exterior submission was indispensable; men were obliged, however unwillingly, to bear the symbols and the colour of liberty: while they plotted to defeat the nation, they must appear to arm in its favour; while they inveighed against the constitution in private parties, they must publicly swear to respect and to defend it; they must do this; or they must fly to foreign climes, and abandon their country in the moment of danger. This was the only alternative; treachery and perjury on the one hand, and desertion on the

the



## P R E F A C E.

xv

the other\*! This was the only alternative, unless a third system were adopted, consistent with integrity, undebased by falsehood and intrigue, the method of honestly yielding to the general will, of obeying the laws, of submitting to the declared inclinations of the King, and of saying—*Since I am forced to take an oath, since I yield to this obligation, I will be faithful to it.* Such, I venture to believe, would have been the conduct of my pupils, even if personal interest and the imbecility of vanity had induced them to hate the revolution, because such conduct alone could accord with frankness and probity. Consider farther, what were the desires, what the projects of the anti-patriots—a counter-revolution? But could that be effected without bloodshed? No, certainly no; civil-war was their secret. Thus the enemies of liberty, stained with perjury, enveloped in darkness and insincerity, engendering plans of murder, have engaged in a faction that acts only in the dark, that bears about a concealed dagger, that builds its hope upon fraud, ambuscade, and deception. Oh! if there are any generous souls that have been inveigled into the odious path, their error will soon be at an end, they will hate obliquity and falsehood too much not quickly to return to the paths of honour, they will regain the party by whom oaths are respected and laws are obeyed. But let us

\* Women in this case are infinitely less culpable. Of them no oath is required, no mark of patriotism; they may be aristocrats without imposture, and without perfidy.

resume

resume the enumeration of the charges alleged against me.

2. I am accused of having *excited in M. de Chartres the wish to be admitted a member of the Society of Friends to the Constitution*. I answer, that he was neither *excited* nor advised to this by me; he was no longer under my authority; he had just obtained his liberty, and he took the step of his own voluntary motion; and with the consent of his father. But I will not deny that I was highly pleased with it, because I saw no other way of accustoming a young man to speak in public, and to give him a knowledge of and relish for public business. Beside, M. de Chartres possessed a more decided character, superior prudence, and I will venture to say a greater degree of knowledge, than are common at his age. I was sure that he would listen with attention to our greatest orators, who frequently speak in that society, and that he would never say an inconsiderate thing\*.

\* M. de Chartres has in reality never made more than three motions in this society. The first in opposition to a motion which declared the several branches of the royal family incapable of filling any public station. The second for giving to the Philanthropic Society the produce of a collection made for an unfortunate person who had refused to accept it. The third to expedite the deliverance of an unhappy prisoner, who had been unjustly detained in jail for eighteen months. M. de Chartres writes a minute journal of all his actions, as well as of every thing he hears that is interesting. This Journal he has shewn to me, and I have taken from it this note.



3. I am reproached with having inspired my pupils with *too strong an attachment to me*; the meaning of which is, that their hearts are found to be too grateful. This ridiculous accusation is injurious neither to them nor to me. The means by which I have gained their affection my Journal will declare. There it will be seen that no preceptor could be more severe in his treatment of them, or could speak the truth with greater strictness and less precaution; there it will be seen how ardent was my desire that they should love every person who ought to be dear to them.

4. It is said that Madame d'Orleans had not *sufficient influence in the Education of her children*. When she entrusted them to my care, she, as well as M. d'Orleans, did me the honour to say that I should be *absolute mistress* of them, and that I should have the sole disposal of the persons connected with the education, who were to be under my directions. As I refused, in taking this charge upon me, to receive *money or favours* of any kind, M. and Madame d'Orleans thought they owed me this striking proof of their perfect confidence. In every thing relative to the interior management of the house, I availed myself of this confidence, one thing excepted, that of paying the expences, which I would never take upon myself; but in whatever related to the children, I never acted without consulting Madame d'Orleans, and without informing my pupils that what I did

was in conformity to her wishes, and those of their father. Finally, desirous of giving her a perfect knowledge of the character and turn of mind of her children, I regularly wrote my Journal, of which, unfortunately for me, she has never read more than four or five articles. I went farther; I wished to render Madame d'Orleans useful in the education of Mademoiselle, and I pointed out to her the means: she assented to my ideas, but did not follow them. Meanwhile Madame d'Orleans was tenderly interested in every thing that concerned her children; and when they were sick she lavished on them the most affectionate attentions. I have seen her expose her health in the discharge of these sacred duties, and bring upon herself a dangerous disease\*; the effects of which, always fatal to those who are not in early youth, have evidently injured her constitution. Fondly attached to all her children, and the eternal object of their gratitude and affection, she would have done for each of them, what she did for the child we have lost †. That she would neither concern herself nor interfere with their education, was because she trusted wholly in me, and thought that as I had greater experience my cares would be more advantageous to them. The confidence she reposed in me was so complete, that

\* The measles.

† The twin sister of Mademoiselle d'Orleans, who died at the age of four years of the measles.

she never asked me a single question respecting their studies, or their proficiency. At Paris she came to see me every day, and always at those times when I was alone in my apartment, that I might attribute these visits solely to the friendship with which she honoured me, and not to the desire of spending an hour with her children. When we went into the country, I urged her to accompany and stay with us, that she might be acquainted with our interior arrangements, and follow the plan of our studies; but she came only at our dinner and walking hours, and during the whole twelve years never resided with us except three or four times when we were performing plays, as our studies were then suspended, and I could spend with her the greater part of the day. These are all facts, of which numerous witnessess exist. In fine, during the whole of this period she bestowed upon me the most affecting marks of confidence and friendship; and a multitude of letters, which I carefully preserve, demonstrate how tender, delicate, and I will even say exalted this sentiment was, and how happy she felt (I use her own words) that her children were in my hands. Yes, these letters will I ever preserve, which speak to me only of *affection* and *acknowledgment*, as well as the cyphers, the portraits, the locks of hair, dear pledges of a friendship so ancient, so warm, and so truly mutual! and I will say to myself as I look at them, *These testimonies of affection, these letters are hers! But all that I have experienced for the last eighteen months has proceeded from another quarter.*

Such

Such was the conduct of Madame d'Orleans respecting me down to the month of October 1789. At that period it was totally changed . . . and that in a manner not less abrupt than unaccountable. At the beginning of last winter Madame d'Orleans wrote a billet to me, to signify that she desired to have Mademoiselle with her, without my being present, three mornings in every week, exclusively of Sunday. Far from starting the smallest objection to this, I voluntarily proposed other arrangements to afford Madame d'Orleans new opportunities of seeing her daughter alone. She also desired, for the winter season, to have M. de Beaujollois with her an hour and a half every morning, and an hour and a half every evening; and though these three hours, spent in a fashionable circle, could not fail extremely to derange the studies of a child of eleven years of age, I was entirely silent upon this inconvenience, and farther proposed to Madame d'Orleans a means of seeing him three times more every week, which she accepted. All these facts, supported by their vouchers, are given in accurate detail at the end of this Journal. The inference from the whole of what I have stated is, that during the time in which I had the entire confidence of Madame d'Orleans relatively to her children, that is, for a period of eleven years, I was constantly anxious that she should live with them, that she should observe their characters, that she should take a part in their education. This she thought proper to refuse; but no sooner

# P R E F A C E.

xxi

Sooner had she, without any explanation, withdrawn from me her confidence and friendship, that is, for the last eighteen months, than she abruptly determined to take from me the authority she had conferred, than, without consulting me, she deranged and curtailed the studies of Mademoiselle and M. de Beaujollois, than she expressed her desire to see Mademoiselle four times a week without my being present. All this took place from the very commencement of winter to the moment M. d'Orleans left Paris, and I entered into no expostulation. If Madame d'Orleans for a period of eleven years had no influence in the education of her children, it was her own choice: when she desired to dispose of their time, I was so far from contesting the point, that I co-operated with and assisted her in disposing without injury of more of their time.

There is one thing respecting which it remains for me to justify myself, which indeed my enemies have never objected to me, but of which my friends, who were witnesses to the sufferings of my mind, frequently complained; that I did not resign my employment more than a year ago. My reason for this procrastination will be found in this volume, immediately after the extracts from the Journal of Education. A citizen, and particularly the citizen of a free state, when he offers his justification to the public, has a right to be heard.

The

The public alone is that august tribunal that can punish a thousand calumnies to which virtue is exposed, and which the laws cannot reach: to the sentence of that tribunal all men are obliged to listen; it is succeeded by the brand of infamy or the laurel of honour; but the extent and importance of this function render it doubly incumbent upon the public to give a candid hearing to every appellant; the meanest individual may without arrogance present itself at that bar, and claim a justice that is the offspring of incontestible facts and demonstrable evidence. If I had only myself to justify, I might have been silent; but I owe a firm vindication to the virtues of my pupils; the prejudices that have been excited against me might, were I silent, reflect upon them. If I for twelve years have been entirely devoted to them, if I have been to them a source of knowledge, truth, and virtue, in all their branches, it will then follow that their gratitude to me has been coincident with and the offspring of rectitude. It is this gratitude, it is this their unalterable attachment that it is my duty to justify. Nor is this the only advantage that may result from the present publication: I flatter myself that it will not be useless to parents and preceptors; I will venture to affirm that no young person can read it without pleasure and without improvement, especially if he be sufficiently reminded that it is not a work of imagination, but a history of facts. The second volume will be found to  
contain



## P R E F A C E.

xxiii

contain more variety, and anecdotes more amusing; but that is the depository of educational *secrets*; it is not adapted to the perusal of children, but will be found useful to their instructors.

LESSONS



**L**  
y  
d  
w  
y  
I  
fu  
ye  
ou  
lu  
Y  
le  
pe  
to

---

L E S S O N S

OF A

GOVERNESS TO HER PUPILS, &c.

---

*Livri, Saturday, 5 August 1786.*

I HAVE no fault, my child \*, to find with you to day. You have been uniformly gentle, diligent, and truly amiable. You spoke very well this evening upon the piece of Don Juan? your observations were judicious and proper. It is very pleasing to me to hear you talk with such penetration and good taste.—I reminded you at table of something which you said without consideration, and you discovered no ill humour. In general your faults are these: You shew too much heedlessness and indolence; you do not reflect sufficiently; with people of whom you know but little, you are too cold and reserved; and on the contrary,

\* M. de Chartres.

where you are acquainted and can be at your ease, you are frequently too loquacious; and, lastly, you do not listen enough to what is said by others. You ought to be reminded of these faults, and should accustom yourself to overcome them whenever it is necessary: if you sincerely desire it, you will always succeed. Habituate yourself in like manner to study and understand the characters of those with whom you live: in our conversations you will communicate to me what remarks you may make, and I will give you my sentiments. You should further habituate yourself never to exaggerate any thing, but to represent whatever you may have seen with the most rigid truth. Unless this be your character, you will never be amiable and deserving of esteem.

---

*Sunday, 6 August 1786.*

A GOOD day in all respects. . . . Observe however that jests and particular expressions are never worth repeating. You were too tedious, for instance, in the jests you bestowed upon my painting. A little raillery, when it is concise and well timed, may be pleasant enough; but if dwelt upon too long, it becomes insipid and troublesome.—In your walk you told M \* \* \* that he was forty-six years old. He does not deny his age; but as he is no longer young, there is no necessity of reminding him of it, particularly in the way of banter; which, in this case, cannot fail to be disagreeable. We should never play our jests on the age of people advanced beyond the meridian

meridian of life. I will add to these hints, a tone of conversation somewhat too lofty, and I have nothing more to say: in every thing else my dear child has been good, assiduous and very amiable.

I have advised you to apply yourself to the study of the characters of those about you; but I except the Abbé Guyot and M. Lebrun; because, as they are appointed to be your tutors, you should take it for granted that they possess every essential virtue and the most estimable characters; and because supposing them to have a few trivial faults, friendship and gratitude will permit you neither to criticise nor to notice them. Friendship alone may be allowed to be clear sighted; but we ought to conceal from others the imperfections of our friends, though it is desirable to know them. This will not apply to those to whom we owe the utmost respect, gratitude and tenderness; as a father, or a mother, and next to these a preceptor. We ought to be blind to their failings, if they have any, and endeavour only to feel the value of their good qualities; for, since it is incumbent on us to esteem and love them, we should avoid the observation of whatever might tend in the smallest degree to weaken these sentiments. I need not tell you that, of all instances, this duty is most rigorous and sacred towards a parent. In excepting M. Lebrun and the Abbé \*, I have no motive of personal interest; for as to my own character, you may reflect upon and study it as much as you please. No one but myself

\* I have never read a single article of this journal either to M. Lebrun or the Abbé Guyot.

can give you this right : I give it freely, upon condition that you tell me ingenuously what are your thoughts, and in my turn I will inform you with equal sincerity whether you are right in your judgment, or whether you deceive yourself. But I must first intreat you to consider for two or three days how a character ought to be studied ; and you will then write down your reflections under the following title : *What method it is proper to adopt in studying the characters of men.* Good night, my dear child. I love you to distraction.

---

*Monday, 7 August 1786.*

**A**N excellent day. I have only observed some little banterings too often repeated, and continued for too long a time.

---

*Tuesday, 8 August 1786.*

**V**ERY well as to your studies, very well as to every thing in your intercourse with me. But I have a heavy complaint against you, which very much afflicts me. Yesterday we left the Duchess d'Orleans in a very dejected state, and with a slight fever ; and during the whole morning it never occurred to you to send a man on horseback to enquire about her health. I at last told you, as well as your brother and mademoiselle, that you should have thought of this, and that it was proper to send and write, as I have accustomed you to do

do ever since I was connected with you\*. I consider it as my first and most pleasing duty continually to remind you of the happiness you enjoy in being the son of the most affectionate mother and the best of fathers. I know you love them; but you do not sufficiently evince it. It frequently happens, when the Duke d'Orleans arrives, that you forget to bid him good morrow, or you go to him with an air of indolence that is astonishing; and when the Duchess is indisposed, you make no enquiries as to her health, and scarcely know whether she is better or worse. If she were dangerously ill, I am sure you would be frantic; and ought you not, the moment she is in pain, to feel the most tender interest in her situation? If you reflected more frequently on her love, her kindness, and the charming attentions she bestows upon you, you would certainly be less unmindful of her. I intreat you to think seriously upon all this. Who can ever depend for an instant on your friendship, if you do not feel the strongest emotions of tenderness towards such a father and mother? You have this tenderness, I am convinced; but then take care that you shew it, and let us have no more of those disgraceful inattentions and neglects, which are absolutely inexcusable †.

\* M. de Chartres was eight years old when he was committed to my care; M. de Montpensier six and a few months; M. de Beaujolois three years, and Mademoiselle eleven months.

† Those who are acquainted with the minds of children, will not be surprised at what I have written. In spite of the best disposition, the levity, peculiar to this age, renders all children, without exception, liable to these kind of neglects towards persons of whom they are most fond, when they do not see them every day.



*Paris, Tuesday, 10 August 1786.*

**Y**ESTERDAY I gave you a letter to read which I had written to Mademoiselle Nonnon \*, requesting that she would withdraw herself from the service of Mademoiselle de Chartres. You seemed to feel that the letter was reasonable and kind, and that the conduct of Monseigneur and Madame towards this young person was extremely noble. Her faults were apparent to you, particularly that low and shocking vice, the consequence of a bad education, which led her so frequently to tell a falsehood; and you readily perceived the propriety of separating her from your sister: but I remarked with pleasure that your humane heart partook of the sufferings which you supposed her to feel. She bestowed the utmost care upon you in your earliest infancy, and you ought never to forget her. It is your duty to interest yourself in her lot, to treat her with friendship whenever you see her, and, as soon as you are your own master, to confer upon her, upon Prieur †, and every one concerned in the care of your infancy, some acts of kindness, observing at the same time the necessary distinctions between their respective characters, and the nature and duration of their services. Monseigneur ‡ and Madame,

\* *Femme de chambre of Mademoiselle d'Orleans.*

† *Formerly first valet de chambre to the princes.*

‡ *Mademoiselle Nonnon died about two years ago. When she quitted Mademoiselle d'Orleans, to whom she was femme de chambre, I obtained for her of M. d'Orleans a gratuity of sixty louis, and an annuity for life of two thousand francs. Since her death, M. de Chartres and M. de Montpensier have enquired into the circumstances of her family; and finding that she had a father poor and infirm, they have settled on him a pension of six hundred livres,*

*in*



in the benefits and pensions they confer on the persons concerned in your education, do and will recompense the cares of which you are the object; but this recompense, however generous it may be, so far from acquitting you of individual gratitude, is an example which their virtue sets before you, and which ought to increase your desire of discharging the obligation personally whenever it shall be in your power. It is time, my child, that you should consider in what manner you ought one day to repay these various debts, which are sacred to a generous and grateful heart. I have said this to you a thousand times; but since you are pleased with this journal, and are fond of perusing it, I will here enumerate the duties that are incumbent upon you in this respect. —To all who bear the name of Rochambault you owe particular proofs of attachment: to Madame Desrois \* friendship and good offices; and you cannot serve her more essentially than by protecting her son-in-law, who is beside a very deserving object. When you are your own master, you will enquire into the situation of Prieur and of Nonnon; and if any thing should be wanting to make their lives comfortable, you will be eager to procure it for them, with that kindness and concern for their welfare which will enhance their happiness, and you will continue to them a protection that will do you honour. You will confer on M. Mirys, M. Meeke, your masters, your attendants, &c. a number of little favours, which

\* The late Marchioness of Rochambault was governess to M. de Chartres and M. de Montpensier from their infancy till they were five years of age; and Madame Desrois was, during the same period, sub-governess.

you may distribute according to their merits, their talents, and their services. With respect to the Abbé Guyot and M. Lebrun, you are sensible of the tender regard you will all your life owe them \*. . . . .

and render his life pleasant and dear to him by an immutable friendship and affection. As the Abbé Guyot, with his church preferment and his pension, will be easy in his circumstances, you will have no other way of shewing your gratitude than by civilities to himself, and kindness for his relations, as well as particular attentions when he shall be indisposed; and these you will equally bestow on M. Lebrun. How just will be those attentions towards persons who will have rendered you so many similar ones in the course of your education! As to myself, need I tell you how you may recompense me? I wish neither for pensions, nor presents, nor favours, nor attentions †; and yet I would have you acquit yourself of your obligations to me. Well then, it must be by *a strict observance of all the instructions that will be written in this book*. You shall owe me something more; and I will ask you, for your own sake, to shew some concern and friendship for my daughters, for the objects that are dear and that belong to me, for my nephew, who, I conceive, will personally merit your kindness, as he is possessed of a good understanding and

\* This space contained merely some particulars of what I conceived M. de Chartres and his brother might do for M. Lebrun.

† *Nor attentions*. Because I have always said the moment their education should be finished, I would retire from Paris and the world, never more to return. I am now executing this resolution two years sooner than I could have wished.

an excellent disposition. Think of all this, my dear child; think of it again and again.—Apropos upon this subject, you appear to me to be too cold towards Madame Defrois: you never speak of her, you shew her no friendship, you never enquire about her: this is unjust and ridiculous\*. Once more then, I request, I conjure you to reflect upon your duties, and to believe that true happiness and true glory consist in the due discharge of them. . . . . I am satisfied with what you have written upon *the method it is proper to adopt in studying the characters of men*. It has a fault of language, but the ideas are just and good. We will talk of this to-morrow with your brother, who has also written upon the same subject.

---

Friday, 11 August 1786.

**A** GOOD day. This morning you scarcely made an inclination of your head to M\*\*\*, and you did not address a word to him. You ought upon all occasions to be polite and obliging to the persons who are attached to your father, and with whom you have the slightest acquaintance, and particularly to artists who have attained to any degree of eminence: . . . . On Tuesday next, my dear child, you are to perform your devotions. Prepare yourself for it by greater fervour in your prayers, by awakening your gratitude to God from the contemplation of the manifold favours he con-

\* Their coldness to Madame Defrois originated in her having publicly quarrelled with me, without cause and without explanation, though I had rendered her very considerable services with M. d'Orleans.

descends to bestow upon you. Ask him to endow you with true piety, the most important favour of all ; ask him with earnestness, and he will grant it you. I shall take care to compose a particular form of prayer for you and your brother, which I request you would learn by heart.

---

*Saint Leu, Saturday, 12 August 1786.*

IN enumerating, the day before yesterday, the persons to whom, when you should be your own master, you ought to shew particular marks of kindness and friendship, I forgot to mention your nurse, of whom you will assuredly one day not be unmindful.—It appears to me a long time since you wrote to the Duke de Penthièvre. Why must I always remind you of these sacred duties, which ought to be so dear to you ? It is extremely painful to me. Every morning when you rise, after having said your prayers, I wish, my dear child, you would meditate for a moment, and enquire what duties you have to perform towards your relations, your friends, your preceptors, &c. This would habituate you to that thought and attention in which you are deficient. In the evening also, after your prayers, it would be useful to you to make the following examination of your conscience, which I intreat you to copy, and read every night till you know it by heart.

‘ Have I discharged my duty to God, my  
 ‘ creator ? Have I prayed to him with fervour  
 ‘ and confidence ? Have I listened with re-  
 ‘ verence and without distraction to the pious  
 ‘ lessons

‘ lessons that have been taught me ? Have I  
 ‘ been mindful to-day of those objects in the  
 ‘ world whom I am most bound to love, my  
 ‘ father and my mother ? Have I fulfilled every  
 ‘ duty towards my relations ? Have I been  
 ‘ kind and affectionate to my brothers and  
 ‘ my sister ? docile, attentive and thankful to  
 ‘ my preceptors ? Have I been disobliging to  
 ‘ any person ? Am I chargeable with any  
 ‘ calumny ? Have I been perfectly sincere ?  
 ‘ Have I been sober, discreet, charitable, mo-  
 ‘ dest, and courageous as far as my age will  
 ‘ admit ? Have I shewn no marks of weakness  
 ‘ and effeminacy, so contemptible in a rational  
 ‘ being ? In short, have I done all the good  
 ‘ that was in my power ? Have I been defici-  
 ‘ ent in no attentions that were due to those,  
 ‘ whether present or absent, to whom I owe  
 ‘ affection, respect, gratitude, friendship, kind-  
 ‘ ness and sympathy\* ?”

It is necessary to examine yourself as to each of these questions, that you beg pardon of God for your faults, intreat him to give you grace that you may not relapse into them, and promise to repair the next day the omisions, neglects, inattentions, and, in short, every error you may have committed.

---

13 August, 1786.

**I**N your studies with me you have done very well, except that you repeated your chronology

\* I put this form of self-examination into the hands of M. Lebrun, who has since read it every evening to our young pupils. There will also be found in this journal other instructions



logy this morning very imperfectly. You have been deficient in attention to me, by not gathering the plants which I wished to copy, and not sending them to Mademoiselle Fer before I got up. Had you thought of pleasing me, you would have supposed it would be agreeable to me that Mademoiselle Fer should have had the plants early, that every thing might have been ready. When you have embraced and kissed hands, you imagine that you have discharged every duty of friendship. But I have told you a thousand times, my dear child, that these demonstrations of attachment are of no value, if the conduct and demeanour be not affectionate and amiable. It is necessary I should speak to you of your second brother\*. I perceive that you do not treat him either with sufficient friendship, or sufficient confidence. I am persuaded that you love him with the warmest affection; but I do not find so close an intimacy between you as I could wish. I can say with truth that, in my private conversations with him †, he never speaks of you but with extreme fondness. You have both excellent hearts; why are they not more inseparably united? . . . . . As you are now both reasonable, I flatter myself that the tender union, which I so much desire, will shortly be established between you for a perpetuity ‡.

structions upon the subject of religion. Beside these I composed for them a work, which I have since published under the title of *Religion considered as the only Basis of Happiness and Philosophy*.

\* M. de Montpensier.

† These conversations passed in our walks; it was a custom with me to walk alone with each of my pupils alternately.

‡ This desire has been fully accomplished.

*Saint*



*Saint Leu, 14 August 1786.*

WHAT pain does it give me to accuse the Duke de Chartres of the heinous offence of failing in attention to the Duchefs d'Orleans! This morning I informed him that I was going to send to Paris, asking him at the same time if he had any commissions. "Yes," he replied; and it related to a bird-cage.—"Have you nothing else to send?"—"No."—At last some body advised him, in a whisper, to write a line to the Duchefs d'Orleans. He had the honesty to confess to me that this idea had not occurred to him. Can it be that children, who have a father and mother so affectionate and fond, should never think of them, and should neglect to shew them that attention which they ought to have for a common friend? Can it be that such reproaches make no impression, and for ever fail to correct this negligence and want of thought? . . . . . This journal will now be written for the Duke de Montpensier, as well as the Duke de Chartres. The former read it this morning, and appeared to be sensibly struck with it: I hope he will derive advantage from it.

---

*At the Stables of the Duke d'Orleans,  
Chaussée d'Antin, 17 August 1786.*

Portrait of the Duke de Montpensier.

YOU have, my child as well as your brother, an excellent heart and a good natural understanding; and with these advantages, at your age, there is no fault which you may not correct,

and no virtue which you may not acquire. You have a disposition for banter and raillery: This you will correct when you are told, that it is the vice of bad hearts and moderate understandings, and that this vice is more dangerous in a prince than in a private individual. You wish to be loved, and such a disposition will cause you to be hated: this idea, I am sure, will have considerable weight with you. You have by nature one very admirable quality, a lively and sincere indignation for every bad action and vicious practice: I have observed this in you from your earliest infancy, during our lessons. You are susceptible of emulation, and have a desire to distinguish yourself: you will one day have a noble mind; and when you shall have resolved to conquer a childish timidity, you will be agreeable, conversible, amiable, because you always attend to what is said to you; because you are no idle prater, no gossip; because you will derive improvement from what is taught you, and know how to evince this improvement without pedantry.—You are sometimes too selfish in a thousand little things; you are not sufficiently sensible how delightful it is to make sacrifices to society and to friendship; how much these sacrifices are repaid by encomiums, by the pleasure they occasion, by the gratitude they inspire, by the lively attachment they create. You are sometimes obstinate and opinionated, at least I am told so, for I have never observed the least appearance of it in your behaviour to me; no proofs of respect, of deference, of submission, can exceed those which I have constantly received from you, during

during the whole time that you have been under my care. How happy a presage ! We may infer from it, in what manner you will one day conduct yourself towards those whom you ought to respect and love a thousand times more than you do me. If you have been thus docile, submissive, respectful, and tender to me, who am but your governess, what will you not be to a father, to a mother, so worthy in every respect of your unbounded confidence and the warmest feelings of your soul ? I have no inquietude upon this point, either as to you or your brother ; I am convinced that all my dear pupils will particularly distinguish themselves by filial piety, which is the first, as well as the most sacred of virtues, and that to which you will owe the happiness of your life.—You have a desire to please, which is a sentiment not only laudable, but indispensably necessary ; though you should take care that it does not lead you into criminal compliances. For example, to please those in whose company you may be, it is not necessary that you should give an opinion contrary to your feelings, or that you should sacrifice an absent person whom you love. It would be dreadful, out of mere complaisance, to speak the least evil of such a person, or to join in the slightest degree of ridicule : in this case you should either take his part, or shew by profound silence that you disapprove of what is said, or meant to be understood ; and if your opinion be asked, speak courageously what you think. A different conduct will be mean and cowardly, and these are vices which you look upon with horror : at your age however,  
little

little matured by reflection, errors of this kind, from want of thought, may escape the best disposed mind. Now that I have made you sensible of the consequences, you will be guilty of nothing that bears the most distant resemblance to this. Consider that a generous and noble heart has no desire to please but by lawful means, that he feels a detestation of every thing bordering upon treachery, and that, for this reason, he respects his friends, and those for whom he has esteem, more in their absence than if they were present, and will avoid behind their back any little pleasantries in which he may be indulged to their face. Consider also, my dear child, that it is impossible to be truly amiable and beloved, without being estimable; and that when we have the weakness to sacrifice honesty to the desire of pleasing, we defeat our own purpose, and draw upon ourselves the contempt even of those who seem to approve of this baseness.—In short, I recommend to you to reflect oftner, to be voluntarily more attentive, to cultivate a greater portion of benevolence without making it necessary for me to inculcate it upon you, to form a habit of thinking and acting for yourself, and to acquire a character noble, firm and sure, and principles immutable and eternal.—You told me this evening that you would write down your faults, in order to give me every day an account of them: this was a laudable intention, but it will only be necessary for you to answer ingenuously the questions I put to you. These questions will not be dictated by a vain curiosity; I have no desire but to inform the minds of my dear pupils, to  
make

make them feel the beauty and loveliness of virtue, and how impossible it is to be happy without it.—I entreat my dear children to read the article of this day a second time, and with all the attention of which they are capable. It depends upon themselves to embellish this journal and make it charming. What pleasure shall I feel in writing eulogiums, instead of admonitions and reproaches! But they are the personages, I am merely an historian, but an historian faithful and impartial, notwithstanding my regard for them; I can only relate the exact truth. Afford me then the extreme gratification of saying such things as are pleasing; let it be seen by this journal that your hearts and your understandings are improved by the counsels of friendship.

---

17 August 1786.

AN excellent day! my dear children, you have been charming! For this reason we will be very merry to-morrow at Bercy, and I shall be happy to procure you this pleasure.—The Duke de Montpensier has given me this evening a most enchanting proof of candour, by acknowledging, or to speak more properly, by making me the confidante of faults, which, but for this ingenuousness, I should not have known, and this confidence I did not at all ask of him. It was, he told me, *to relieve his heart*. He has sensibly touched mine; it is a lovely child, who improves every day, and has made an astonishing progress in the short space of a year.

21st August

21 August 1786.

. . . . .

THE Duke de Penthièvre called this evening. The Duke de Chartres behaved very well ; but the Duke de Montpensier played with a stick, without taking any notice of him, without going near him, without speaking to him. I am sure you both feel the affection which is due to a grandfather, for whom also the Duchess d'Orleans has the utmost tenderness. This attachment of the Duchess would be sufficient of itself to satisfy me of yours ; but you have other reasons to esteem and love him, his personal virtue which is certainly a model of perfection, and the kindness, the agreeable attentions, the affectionate regard which he shews towards you. You have both given me personal proofs of your esteem : one by writing me a very pretty letter, and the Duke de Chartres by bringing me some coloured crayons and two books of drawing paper. But, my children, I have already told you a thousand times, that you are never to give me any thing you purchase, however trifling may be its value, or whatever may be the pretext. It is not that there is any impropriety in your offering such things as crayons, paper, and flowers to whomsoever you please ; because they are civilities rather than presents ; to any other person the little gifts may be pleasing and proper ; but respecting myself, Pamela and Henrietta, I must absolutely prohibit them. You will be careful not to forget this, and let it be the last time I shall have occasion to remind you of it. You must not be angry with me



me upon this account, since, when your education shall be finished, and I live at my own chateau, you shall maintain me in *griffin* paper, copy-books, and wood for my turnery machine; and I on my part, will return your presents in slight summer waistcoats and other little articles of my own work. But, till then, I must absolutely insist upon it that you shew me none of this kind of attentions.

---

25 August 1786.

THE Duke de Chartres was very imperfect in his German lesson to-day.—I accompanied you both to the French Academy; you listened attentively and with interest, particularly the Duke de Chartres; but I had requested you to say some civil things to M. M\*\*\*, to whom you were indebted for your seats. The Duke de Chartres, in a sheepish manner, spoke only a few words to him, and the Duke de Montpensier did not utter a syllable. All my entreaties could not prevail on the latter to pronounce a single complimentary phrase, which gave him the air of a child six years of age, very stupid and very uncivil. The Duke de Chartres takes no care how he presents himself; he walks with his head hung down, his knees and his body bent and jolting, and there is not an old man who mounts a staircase so heavily and with so ill a grace. It is time he should acquire a more easy deportment, and particularly a stronger ambition to please. They crowned at the Academy the young Christian Joseph who had saved the lives of  
three

three children at the risk of his own ; and on the part of the Saloon of Arts, fifty louis were given to Dame Hurel who, for the space of fifteen years, supported her mistress reduced to a state of misery. This picture of virtue recompensed and honoured with the loudest applause, was extremely affecting. You have seen how beautiful virtue is, and what enthusiasm it inspires. Reflect that your rank and situation secure to you the power of doing many brilliant and virtuous actions ; and this ought to be your desire and your greatest ambition.

---

26 *August.*

A very good day. The Duke de Chartres has made the most formal promises to conquer his timidity, and to say in a graceful manner all the polite and civil things that may be expedient, and upon this promise I rely.

---

27 *August,*

AT his drawing the Duke de Chartres was deficient in application ; but without my interrogating him, he informed me of this himself with a charming candour, though the master had not remarked it. Upon all occasions I owe this justice to my dear children, that they observe towards me the most perfect truth ; that they never conceal any thing ; that they come of their own accord and tell me their faults with an enchanting simplicity ; that they are no longer afraid of my counsels, but on

the

the contrary desire and love them. This is the way for them to acquire knowledge and arrive at perfection.—My children will write every Sunday upon some subject which I shall give them. Let them take the following for the approaching Sunday: *In what does the delicacy of taste and sentiment consist?* They will write an answer to this question.

---

26 August 1786.

THE analyses of theatrical performances, dictated by the princes upon returning home from the play, are extremely exact both as to names and incidents. They were indeed not less accurate when they were made from a play that was read; but then I was watchful that they should listen attentively, and in the representation there are a thousand things that necessarily distract the mind. It is very evident therefore to me that M. Lebrun, who accompanied us to the play, and who reads the theatrical critiques in the *Journal de Paris*, has assisted the princes in defiance of my express prohibition, of which the princes themselves were witnesses. I asked the Duke de Montpensier if he had been assisted? He acknowledged that he had been considerably in Virginia. I put the same question to the Duke de Chartres, who answered me three times in the negative, but with blushes and a trembling voice. The next moment he came in tears to tell me that he had not spoken the truth, and expressed his regret in a very affecting manner.—I cannot dissemble, my dear children, that M. Lebrun has done a very blameable action.

You

You were witnesses of my having requested, both in person and by writing, that he would not tell you a single word: he promised; and after making you disobey me, he has exposed you to prevarication and falsehood. In the mean time M. Lebrun is so estimable a character, that I am persuaded the fault originated in thoughtlessness, and that he will not be guilty of it a second time. I dare believe he has told you himself how much he was to blame. My children, never follow any advice in which you shall perceive the least thing contrary to rectitude and exact truth. You have naturally great candour and frankness: preserve, as a valuable treasure, these charming qualities, without which your characters will never be estimable. I am convinced that you will do nothing that shall taint these virtues so necessary to your reputation and your happiness, and that you will never employ artifice and dissimulation with your affectionate friend.

---

30 August 1786.

**M.** LEBRUN has acknowledged in his Journal, without the least subterfuge, that he was very much to blame: thus he repairs his fault by giving you an example of candour and ingenuousness which you will do right to imitate.

---

3 September 1786.

**Y**OU bid me good morrow this morning, but when you left me yesterday I was indisposed, and you should have asked me how I had slept,

dept, and if I had still a headache or sore throat. It is thus we shew our friendship. These proofs of sympathy and concern we owe to our common acquaintance; with how much stronger reason are they due to our friends?—I see by the Journal of M. Lebrun that the morning has been good, and that the Duke de Chartres has waited upon the Abbé de Fontbonne to enquire about the disastrous fires which broke out lately, with an air of humanity that will give this Divine a good opinion of him. These benevolent and pleasing habits are easily acquired, and will make every body respect and love you. When you shall be perfect in them, you will cease to be regarded as a silly child to whom we pay no attention; every body will be glad to see you, and will treat you as a young prince of promising talents and virtue.

---

4 September 1786.

I HAD yesterday afternoon a violent attack of the colick, and you discovered the greatest sensibility.—By the Journal of M. Lebrun I find that it was the Duke de Montpensier who thought this morning of sending to enquire how I did. You left me yesterday evening in a very calm state, and there was no reason for inquietude; yet, consistently with the strict duties of friendship, you ought to have given orders before you went to bed for enquiries to be made, at eight o'clock in the morning, if I had any return of my complaint during the night, and you should again have sent at ten to learn from myself, the instant I awoke, the exact

exact state of my health. Such are the benevolent and tender cares which a lively and sincere friendship dictates. You must accustom yourselves to the observance of them if you wish to be loved.—You were not able to write a single word yesterday upon the subject of *Delicacy* which I had given you. You ought to be more forward in composition; but I will write the article myself in our journal when I have a little more strength.

M. Saiffert came to see me, and you did not speak a word to him, which is the more blameable as the Duchess d'Orleans had been indisposed, and you should have asked a thousand questions about her. At last I requested you to say something to M. Saiffert, which you did; but as the proper moment was elapsed, and as it was after a quarter of an hour's neglect, there was neither merit nor grace in this. The next time I have occasion to remind you of this duty, I shall inflict on you some penance.

Though you knew that the Duchess d'Orleans was unwell and confined to her bed, you had not the attention to send this afternoon to ask respecting her health. At half past five I sent myself. The Duke de Chartres is the less excusable, as I made him read, on purpose, an article at the beginning of this journal, where I had animadverted upon a similar fault. It is really unexampled. They have both discovered the most sensible and poignant affliction for so odious a neglect, and I dare believe that they will never be guilty of it again; but, on the contrary, will in future be mindful, as they ought, of a mother, who

thinks



thinks of them every moment of her life, who cannot suffer them to be ever so slightly indisposed without coming and sending perpetually, and without interrogating every body about them.

---

6 September 1786.

**N**EITHER of you had the goodness to send this morning to ask how I did : all that know me have shewn me this civility except yourselves. When a person has been ill, politeness demands that we should continue our enquiries till he has made his first appearance abroad. Having been so frequently reminded of your duty in this respect, you ought to surpass and not fall short of others ; but you are always below the degree of attention common in society.—The Duke de Montpensier answered in a very unsatisfactory manner the questions I put him yesterday about what he had been reading ; but he wrote me this morning a very pretty letter, for which I thank him. . . . . The princes had the attention to send of their own accord to enquire about the health of Madame, and the Duke de Chartres to purchase some flowers for her.

DEFINITION OF DELICACY.

DELICACY of taste consists in the avoiding every thing gross and low ; in never employing trite and proverbial expressions ; in having no complacency for that sort of jests which are not consistent with decency, and which have not either ingenuity or grace ; and above all in the never uttering jests of a blunt or embar-

raising nature : as for instance, never jesting upon a man's figure, upon his natural defects, his want of fortune, his obscure birth, or his age. It is allowable however to jest with a rich man, if he be not of a covetous disposition, upon his wearing a threadbare coat, &c. But this jest would be converted into an odious one if directed towards a person of narrow fortune, and so of the rest. It would also be exceedingly gross to speak in general terms upon some disagreeable subject, which any person in company might take to himself, and which might recall to his mind an unpleasant truth, or any misfortune that had befallen him ; as for instance, if you jested upon long noses, in company of a person with a long nose ; or if, without any tone of pleasantry, you talked of people with one eye, with a hunch back or of bastards, before a person who had only one eye, or a hunch back, or was a bastard ; or if in company with a person sixty years of age, and speaking of another of the same age, you called them an old man or an old woman. Delicacy of sentiment consists in a more scrupulous conscientiousness in our actions and conduct than is common even in persons of irreproachable probity : as for example, when we play for money, the deciding, in a doubtful case, against ourselves ; and if we play with another equally punctilious, to refuse to take advantage of this decision, and to call in a third person. Delicacy of sentiment also leads us to prevent the wishes of those whom we are desirous to oblige ; it inspires a thousand pleasing attentions, and gives a particular grace to the favours we confer. In short delicacy of taste makes its possessor polite, gives an agreeable

able tone to his conduct, and elevates his manners. Delicacy of sentiment renders its possessor estimable, and procures him all the benefits of friendship. If we would be amiable, applauded, and worthy of the love of others, we must have delicacy in both these respects.——You shall write on Sunday upon the following subject: *What are the duties of friendship, or in what manner ought we to act towards our friends?*

---

7 September 1786.

THE Duke de Montpensier read aloud this evening a tragedy with considerable emulation, and a degree of self-possession that very much astonished and pleased me. . . . The Duke d'Orleans will return soon. I flatter myself that you will recollect all you have told me of your gratitude and affection, and that you will be more amiable in your conduct towards him. Though he sees you continually you are almost strangers to him, for you shew no desire to talk with him, and you never ask him any questions. Your manners in this respect will I hope be changed, and you will now feel how sweet it is to converse with a father and a mother so deserving of your love. If you were more amiable (and you may be so whenever you please) you would now be a very agreeable society to them. But in reality, the Count de Beaujolois is more familiar and more pleasing than you. He asks them questions, he interests himself in what they say, he is fond without being troublesome, he talks without empty prattle, without meanness, and with a charming

charming ease : and he is not yet seven years of age.

---

8 September 1786.

A GOOD day.—At dinner I prevailed on the Duke de Chartres to speak to an old servant of the house who assisted, and he did it with a grace : I could have wished it had been voluntary, and without any memento on my part. . . . The Duke de Chartres has written to the Duke de Penthièvre, and concludes his letter with assuring him of his *friendship*. This expression is never employed towards persons entitled to the strongest sentiments of respect. He should have used the word *affection*, or *attachment*. . . . The princes have been very engaging to-day with Madame, and more agreeable in their deportment to Monseigneur. . . .

---

10 September 1786.

YESTERDAY was blameless ; the present day has been equally so as to your intercourse with me ; but this morning the Duke de Montpensier displayed a spirit of contradiction to his brother, and the Duke de Chartres irritated him by some very indecent retorts. If this happen again I shall take some mode of putting a stop to it. Is it thus that friends and brothers should live together ? Such behaviour is stupid and contemptible.—You have both written well upon the subject I gave you, particularly the Duke de Chartres. I will write myself upon the same subject in our Journal the first leisure moment I have.—The Duke de Chartres

Chartres was very obliging and polite to some English ladies, who spent the afternoon with us, and they thought him a charming youth. The Duke de Montpensier was by no means equally agreeable.—The Duke de Chartres related to me, pleasantly enough, the frolics of the Count de Beaujolois; but he spoiled in a great measure his recital by dwelling too long upon it, by repeating the same thing ten times over, and making it an endless tale. He seems to have no wish to correct himself of this loquacity: when he perceives that we are amused with his tale, he begins again and draws it out to a most tedious length. I once more therefore tell him, that we should relate what we have to say in as few words as possible, never load the recital with a thousand petty details, and when we have told our story in the best manner we are able, drop it and change the conversation. If he preserve this habit of eternal babble and repetition, nobody will tell him that he is extremely tiresome, but every body will think so; and will believe beside, what is not true, that he is destitute of understanding. I conjure him then to think of this, and to cure himself of so bad a habit, without which it is impossible he should be amiable. There is a proverb which says, *Fools never know when to stop*; let him remember this when he laughs, when he tells a story, when he makes use of any little innocent jest or banter; for these are cases in which the Duke de Chartres never knows when to stop. When he laughs, it is a loud roar that lasts for an hour, and almost always at something the reverse of pleasantry. When he is disposed to banter, there is no end to his jests. When he relates a story,



he introduces a thousand unnecessary circumstances, begins it again, and talks of nothing else. This is really insupportable; whereas if he knew when to stop, he would frequently be very entertaining.

---

22 September 1786.

IN WHAT MANNER OUGHT WE TO CHOOSE  
OUR FRIENDS?

**W**E should in the first place be careful to make a wise choice. In order to this it is necessary to know if the person with whom we are desirous of forming an intimacy be a man of unsullied reputation, if he be supposed to possess an elevated mind, if he pass for a man of talents and information, if he be a dutiful son, if he live upon good terms with his relations, and these relations be respectable in the world; lastly, if his manners be polite and accomplished. Satisfied as to these points, we may begin an acquaintance with him; but we must still act with caution. We must study his character, observe whether he be prudent and sincere, which we may learn from a thousand little circumstances, whether he be a person to whom you may safely trust yourself, whether he be incapable of malice or deceit; and if after a sufficient trial, we find him to possess all these virtues, we may then cultivate his friendship.

When you shall come to have friends, you may easily ascertain the sincerity of their attachment. The following is a sure criterion.

If they never ask a favour that would lead you to be unjust to some other person.

If



If they feel a delicacy and unwillingness even to ask such favours as there may be no impropriety in your granting.

If they never flatter you.

If they give you good advice at the risk of displeasing you for the moment.

If they tell you of your faults.

If they endeavour as much as possible to make you in love with your duty.

If they exert their influence to maintain the union which ought to subsist between you and your parents, to confirm you in the persuasion that it is your indispensable duty to make them happy, that the felicity of your own life depends upon your loving them, upon your consulting them in every thing, upon your concealing nothing from them, upon your having a perfect confidence in them, and lastly, upon your living in the utmost harmony with your brothers and your sister.—If you meet with friends who will speak and act in this manner, you may unhesitatingly give them your confidence: but such friends are seldom to be found. In the mean time, they are the only persons who are entitled to the appellation; and if any man, directly or indirectly, should attempt to diminish the regard you owe to your parents, you may be sure that he has no real attachment to you, and that he is a dangerous and contemptible character. When you shall have found a friend that is worthy of you, you will owe him every service that is not incompatible with the welfare of other men. It will be your duty to anticipate every reasonable wish of his heart. Beside the favours you confer upon him yourself, you ought to seek his preferment by interceding in his behalf warmly

and perseveringly at court. You should feel an interest in every thing that relates to him. Reposing confidence in him yourself, you should be desirous of his confidence in return, and should therefore talk to him with an air of anxiety and concern for his welfare, that would lead him to disclose his situation and feelings with the same freedom that you have disclosed yours. If you appear to love him only that he might listen to you, you may have a confident, but you will have no friend. It is for this reason that princes are in general so destitute of friends. I shall say nothing of the tender cares you will owe to your friend, when he shall be sick, or shall labour under affliction: this obligation speaks for itself.

Such ought to be your conduct towards your intimate friends, that is, towards one or two persons. Beside these you may form other ties to which the world gives the name of friendship, but which in reality are only the ties of society. These also have their obligations, though they are greatly subordinate to those of true friendship. They consist in a desire to serve the persons in question, and in treating them with kindness and esteem. I think, however, that if either of your brothers had any just cause of complaint against a person whom you had not yet made your friend, it would be a duty you would owe to your brother not to form any particular intimacy with this person. But if you had already contracted a friendship for him, and one of your brothers should take a dislike to this person, you ought not on that account to sacrifice your friend, unless his conduct to your brother should have been decidedly unjust, or unless he had sought  
to

to promote variance and enmity between you and your brother. In either of these cases he would have acted contemptibly, and would no longer be deserving of your friendship; but should it be otherwise, you ought not to give up your friend because his society happens to be no longer agreeable to your brother. This is so unreasonable in itself that you should consider it as a point agreed upon between yourselves. But if Madame or Monseigneur should have a quarrel with one of your friends, you ought immediately to forsake his acquaintance, unless its continuance has their approbation. Monseigneur and Madame have too much good sense to act from prejudice or caprice; and you may be assured that, if they entertain a dislike to any person, they have just reasons for it, and their sentiments in this respect ought to regulate yours and determine your conduct.—You should never suffer your friends to be accused secretly and without proof of any injustice to you. Always distrust the man who shall speak evil of them; mean envy is commonly the motive of such accusations; and when they are not supported by indubitable evidence, it becomes you to pay no attention to them, and to silence the calumniator by assuming an air of coldness and incredulity. In short, even if you were told of any injury that was done you by your friend, and proofs were adduced in support of the charge, however heinous might be the offence and however positive the evidence, you would be deficient in the duties of friendship if, satisfied with this, you resolved to renounce his acquaintance. What appears to be an undoubted truth, may be mere illusion or imposture. Such would be the reflection of a man

of generosity and feeling. You ought therefore, before you discard your friend, to have a free and candid explanation with him; for it is thus only he will be able to justify himself, and you will be unpardonable if you do not afford him every opportunity in your power of doing it. In this explanation, if he prove his innocence, you will have the happiness of preserving a friend who, by this proceeding, will be more strongly attached to you: but if he be unable to exculpate himself, then, without noise or contention, you should gradually alienate yourself from him, and thus will you be chargeable with no injustice.—Such, my children, are the principal duties of friendship. If they are thus extensive in general instances, judge what is due from brother to brother, a friendship more valuable and sincere than any that can be formed with the world! Judge what is due to a tender father, to a fond and indulgent mother, our first and truest friends, and the only ones in whom we may implicitly trust in all things!

On Sunday you will write on the following subject: *In what consists the discretion which we ought to observe in our intercourse with others?* I entreat you to employ upon this subject the utmost thought and attention.

---

13 September 1786.

**Y**ESTERDAY, in passing by a gallows on which a malefactor was exposed, the Duke de Chartres manifested a distortion of countenance which is only pardonable in a child. If  
you

you had passed at the moment of execution, this emotion might have been natural, as humanity would have been its excuse. Remember, my child, that in a man nothing is more indispensable than courage, that the smallest instance of weakness is unpardonable, and that the world has no indulgence in this case. Humanity consists, not in outward signs, as shrieks, grimaces, a readiness to shed tears, &c. these we should leave to silly women; but in a firm and active beneficence. I will tell you how you should shew your humanity.

By recommending to your coachman to drive cautiously, and to take care that he does not hurt any body. When you travel, if an accident is occasioned by your carriage, either in the streets or the high road, to stop, and assist yourself in administering the necessary succour. If it be a poor man who has received the hurt, to recompense him liberally with your purse; you cannot give too much in such a case. If the accident be a melancholy one, to provide for the unhappy sufferer during the rest of his life\*; and lastly, if it be occasioned by the negligence of your coachman, to dismiss him from your service.

Never suffer large dogs to run before your carriage, because they are the occasion of a thousand accidents. In your field diversions be extremely careful that you do not wound any body. If one of your domestics, or any

\* I ought to have added, that, if it were in the high road, it would be our duty to take the wounded person into the carriage. There is not a human being, I trust, who would be deficient in this care; but in an enumeration of particulars to children we should omit nothing.



poor person, should happen to be struck by a single grain of shot, reward him instantly, however trifling may be the injury. If, in the high road where no succour is to be had; you should meet with a person who had unfortunately been wounded, though you had no part in the accident, humanity would dictate to you to stop and afford him every relief in your power. In like manner if a carriage be broken down, you should send your people to offer their services: if the persons to whom it has happened be respectable in society, though they may not be of the circle of your acquaintance, you should offer them places in your own carriage; if they were of the circle of your acquaintance, the obligation would be still stronger. This however is a civility you ought not to shew but to persons whose names are known to you, that you may not incur the risk of receiving dishonest people, a danger which is less of course in the day time, as there will be no false appearances to mislead you. If the carriage which is broken be at a distance from any house, and if the persons who were travelling in it appear any way suspicious, it is enough to send and enquire whether you can be of any service to them by the assistance of your people, or by sending a man on horseback to procure what they want. If they are persons of unquestionable character, offer them seats in your carriage; and if they are not only of character, but also ladies, alight yourself and make the offer in person. In short, humanity requires that you travel as little as possible during the night, in consideration of your people; and that you do not expose them unnecessarily



unnecessarily to the rigours of the cold, of the rain, or of excessive heat. There are men who indulge themselves in jests contrary to humanity : this is frequently not so much the result of an unfeeling disposition, as of a want of reflection. Avoid every thing of this kind, and let it be an inviolable law with you never to utter a pleasantry upon an occasion that ought to excite your pity.—Never speak a harsh word to a poor man, even though he should be troublesome and importunate : think of his situation, and that by treating him rudely, you not only inhumanly insult his poverty, but abuse your own rank : remember the terrible denunciations of God against the man who despises and irritates the poor.—Receive with readiness and an air of condescension and benevolence every petition that shall be presented to you. Never shew the smallest degree of contempt for the people : to them has ever belonged the privilege of deciding the reputation of princes.

Such are the duties of humanity. They ought ever to be allied with manly firmness. If you are witnesses of a melancholy accident, you should have the fortitude to abstain from useless lamentations, to apply instant succour, and not betray that weak and effeminate pity which is unable to endure the sight of a wound. There is a barbarity in contemplating these objects from mere curiosity ; but when they fall in our way, or we are obliged to see them in order to administer relief, it would be extreme weakness not to be able to bear the sight. A greater weakness still would be to shudder at the sight of a dead body ; in a man this is a shameful and contemptible instance of pusillanimity. There are persons who, to avoid this  
absurdity,

absurdity, fall into another, by employing jests and merriment upon these occasions, which are always ill placed and absurd, and the more so as they have a mean and ostentatious air of courage. Avoid both these extremes: content yourselves with discovering a perfect composure, affect nothing, be firm with simplicity, it is the only way in which you can be so with honour.—When you shall come to the possession of estates, your humanity, I am convinced, will remind you that there are manorial rights, ruinous to the peasant, and which claim your attention. I wish you to be fully acquainted with this subject, that you may not be cruel through ignorance, as so many others have been \*. You thus see that the duties of humanity alone are very extensive, and when we are sufficiently informed of them, we shall be truly criminal if we do not fully discharge them. Many persons are deficient in humanity, because they are ignorant of its obligations. This is not your case; and if you ever fail in them you will be absolutely inexcusable. You ought even to be more than humane, you should be beneficent, you should seek out the unfortunate, for you will have experienced from your infancy the happiness of relieving them. This delightful happiness you will never renounce, since it will draw down upon you every blessing

\* In conformity to this wish, I procured a copy of the abominable *code of game laws*. It was not difficult to excite their indignation at these laws, and they gave me their word of honour never to avail themselves of such inhuman rights. I thus prepared them, without knowing it, to admire the new constitution which is to destroy this horrible tyranny as well as a thousand other abuses over which I have lamented with my pupils.

of

A  
you

\* A  
ced in  
on the  
skilful  
the chi  
† A  
protect

of Heaven, and adorn you with true glory as long as you live.—I observe with pleasure how much you are interested in that unfortunate child whom you have taken under your care \*. Your attentions to him are truly unremitted.—You are deserving of praise also for the kindness you bestow on Augustin †, and the desire you feel that he should become a useful member of society. It was of your own accord—I always make use of this phrase with pleasure, because it constitutes all the merit of your actions—It was of your own accord that you required of him to bring a note every day from his schoolmaster. But have you thought of instructing him in religion? have you sent him to confession? have you recommended him to the Abbé Moreau? I could wish that he might walk very seldom alone in the streets, and never of an evening. Think more of such things, and be careful that this child is not corrupted: having taken the charge upon yourselves, remember that you are answerable for him.—If you wish it we will pay a visit next week to our poor paralytick.

---

14 September 1786.

**A**FTER reading the article of yesterday, you informed me that the Duchesse d'Orleans

\* A poor little child who had a wound that was pronounced incurable: he had been in the hands of a quack who was on the point of amputating his arm; my pupils sent for a skilful surgeon (M. Bras-d'Or), and saved the arm and life of the child.

† A little peasant boy whom they had taken under their protection.

had

had a dog that ran before her carriage \*. She is so distinguished for her humanity, and has ever been such a complete model of goodness, that we may be assured she knows this dog to be too gentle and quiet to hurt any one. Beside she has been fourteen or fifteen years without a dog of this kind, and she is now so beloved by the people, that, notwithstanding their dislike of this custom, they will scarcely animadvert upon it in so excellent a person. When you shall have acquired her virtues and reputation, you may be indulged in many things, which, upon your first entrance into life, would be very unbecoming in you to practise.

---

16 September 1786.

**Y**OU gave a watch to Vincent, to whom it was proper you should make some present. When we asked him what o'clock it was, I could have wished this idea had occurred to you as well as to me, and that you had in a whisper requested my permission to do this. He is a very good young man, and you seem to be pleased with him, and yet you never think of bestowing any reward on him! When you approve of the conduct of persons in his station, you should shew your approbation by acts of kindness. I could also have very much wished that you had (*of your own accord*) de-

\* She had had this dog but a very little while, and as I seldom went with her in her carriage I was ignorant of the circumstance: but had I known it, I should still have endeavoured to inculcate on them a detestation of this custom, because I believe it to be a dangerous one.

fired

fired your servants to give something to the poor girl whom you saw walking upon crutches. You do benevolent things with pleasure and a good heart, but it is almost always necessary to remind you of the opportunities. Think more of these things, my dear children, I conjure you, for the sake of your own happiness and reputation.

---

17 September 1786.

THE day before yesterday the Duke de Chartres received a very beautiful paroquet from the Chevalier de Boufflers. Knowing my mother's fondness for these birds, he offered it to her *of his own accord* and with a charming grace, though he was very much attached to the bird. My mother refused to accept it, and he is endeavouring to procure her another: all this is very amiable.

---

18 September 1786.

THE Duke de Montpensier was very agreeable to-day at the house of his mamma, and Madame de Rully justly praised his politeness. The attention of the Duke de Chartres was engaged upon two parroquets, which gave him a very idiot appearance.—The Duke de Chartres brought me his theme on the discretion to be observed in our intercourse with others. I am satisfied with the ideas it contains, but the writing and spelling are frightful. You are  
inexcusable

inexcusable when you commit faults of orthography, as you are perfect masters of it. Now that you have clear ideas, I shall teach you to compose with method. I have, on your account, reflected upon this subject, and will give you some sure rules for every species of composition. We will practise together twice a week, beginning to-morrow; and I will write down in this book the rules to be observed. I will also write, when I have leisure, my ideas of what constitutes the discretion to be observed in our intercourse with others.

---

19 September 1786.

THE Duke de Chartres, indisposed with a cold, has kept his chamber all day.—The Duke de Montpensier has charmed me by his application, his mildness, his attention, and his sensibility. I made him repeat *tête-a-tête* a considerable number of chronological abridgments, which he did admirably well, comparing the dates, the times and the personages: we introduced some historical incidents which I related to him, and in which he was very much interested. During the whole day he has not discovered the least degree of remissness, languor, or want of application. If every day were to pass in this manner, how profitable would they be, and how happy would it make me! He sent of himself to make enquiries respecting Madame, and expressed himself to me in terms of affection and joy upon her looking so charmingly this morning.

THE



*20 September 1786.*

**T**HE Duke de Chartres, having a cold, but without fever, passed the whole of yesterday in total inaction. Though he were in bed he might have written, or read, or asked somebody to read to him. This listlessness, upon so slight an indisposition, is truly shameful, especially in a man, and I could not excuse it even in Mademoiselle.—I know that the Duke Penthièvre came yesterday to see the Duke de Chartres, and that the prince did not thank him for the kindness of this visit.

---

*21 September 1786.*

**T**HE Duke de Montpensier did not give a proper answer to my questions at the beginning of the reading this evening; his answers afterwards were very proper, and in every other respect the day has been irreproachable. He displays at all times an extreme sensibility, a delightful sweetness, and an ardent desire to excel. He is not so forward in some respects as he might have been, because it is only within a year that he has had the ambition to distinguish himself; if this continue, he will soon recover his lost time.

Yesterday I only wrote in the journal in the morning, and therefore had not an opportunity of observing, that during the whole day the Duke de Montpensier behaved remarkably well and gave me extreme pleasure.

THE

22 September 1786.

THE Duke de Montpensier again charming, extremely diligent, and occupied in his studies with seeming pleasure and assiduity. He was this evening very obliging and very amiable in his behaviour to M. de Chenier: if he continue thus for the space of two months, counting from to-day, I will give him, not what we formerly called a reward,—his true reward will be the report I shall make of him to Monseigneur and Madame,—but I will give him some mark of my particular satisfaction; and I will consider how to do this in a way that shall be most agreeable to his *disposition and his heart*, and *most useful to his instruction*. It is just that we should bestow the most studied attentions upon so docile, industrious, sensible and lovely a child. . . . . The Duke de Montpensier brought me some of his writing to-day; which was excellent. . . . .

23 September 1786.

ON THE DISCRETION TO BE OBSERVED IN  
OUR INTERCOURSE WITH OTHERS.

THIS discretion consists, not only in keeping with inviolable fidelity the secrets which are intrusted to us, but in never repeating what is said in private company, or between persons who frequently associate together; and even in a numerous circle, if any thing inconsiderate be said, or any stigma be thrown upon another, we ought not to cite the circumstance by mentioning the name of the person, nor even

even  
any  
know  
lumn  
ed u  
reful  
saying  
quan  
any i  
feel  
but y  
the p  
happ  
to y  
imag  
will  
He c  
with  
sterer  
cour  
poses  
a for  
deco  
not  
other  
nal,  
out i  
been  
alway  
In  
happ  
whon  
able,  
In th  
other  
good

even to allude to it without naming him. If any disturbance be occasioned by it, and, knowing that you were present when the calumny was uttered, you should be interrogated upon the subject, you ought absolutely to refuse to answer, and to excuse yourself by saying that you have no desire to interfere in quarrels of this nature. If you are witness of any instance of deceit or treachery, you should feel the utmost detestation of it in your heart, but you ought not to interfere by informing the party upon whom it is practised, unless it happens to be a person that is extremely dear to you: without this precaution, while you imagine that you are doing a good office, you will be the occasion of a thousand dissensions. He can have no discretion in his intercourse with others who is either a tattler, or a banterer, or a calumniator; for the tattler says of course a thousand inconsiderate things, and exposes every one; the banterer, for the sake of a sorry jest, is frequently chargeable with indecorum and injustice; and the calumniator not only repeats the evil that he knows of others, which is extremely odious and criminal, but is frequently guilty of calumny without intending it, by repeating the evil that has been told him, which is very often false and always exaggerated.

In a moment of ill humour it sometimes happens that we speak slightly of those whom we best love: this is exceedingly blameable, and will never, I hope, be your crime. In the mean time we ought to pardon it in others, particularly if we know them to possess a good heart. If any persons for whom you should entertain

entertain an affection, and who should also be attached to each other, fall into this error when you were present, you would do very ill to carry an account of it to the slighted party; it becomes you on the contrary to reconcile them to each other, to exert all your influence to prevent a misunderstanding, and to heal any misapprehension between them by carefully concealing every thing that could irritate it. Such is the conduct you ought constantly to observe, and above all among your own relations, with your brothers, your sister, your brothers' wives, &c. When you remark any coldness between them, a circumstance I trust that will never occur, but which is nevertheless possible, the object of every word you utter should be peace and conciliation. These are the principles incumbent upon us in all intimate intercourse; and of consequence the duty is still more sacred in the case of our brothers and sisters.

Another error very inconsistent with discretion and unbecoming in our intercourse with others, is the absurd vanity of wishing to appear in possession of every body's secrets. Of all follies there is none more contemptible than that of betraying a secret, in order to prove that we know it. Discretion in our intercourse also requires that we should free ourselves from all frivolous curiosity, which beside is always the mark of a little mind. Persons who are desirous of prying into every thing are always idle, empty, and are beheld with jealousy and aversion.

You see then that discretion in our intercourse with others is the produce of many other qualities

qualities combined. Accordingly the world sets so great a value upon this virtue, that all other virtues without it are counted as nothing. Nor is this unnatural; there is no quality in the individual from which the society in general derives so many advantages. I must therefore recommend it to you to endeavour to secure to yourselves this quality, and to correct without delay all those faults which shall be found incompatible with it.

---

24 September 1786.

THE Duke de Chartres consulted me on some mark of esteem he was desirous of shewing to the Duke de Penthièvre, of which I very much approved, and was delighted that he thought of this of himself.—I have had company this evening, and I shall make it a practice every Sunday in order to accustom you to talk in publick. You were both extremely amiable, and interested yourselves very much in the conversation. I was surpris'd at your ease, your politeness, and the charming manner in which you listened and talked.

---

25 September 1786.

. . . . .  
M. LEBRUN complains in his journal, that the Duke de Montpensier takes a pleasure in mimicking and ridiculing his brother, and that his brother has the weakness to provoke him to it by laughing at him. This is all very silly, and I advise the Duke de Montpensier to get rid of this absurd practice, which I certainly shall

shall not over-look. Nothing can give so unfavourable an impression of his understanding and character. . . . .

3 October 1786.

YESTERDAY was irreproachable, our readings charming, the princes attentive, and replying to my questions like angels. To-day my dear children have afforded me equal delight. We took an airing for two or three hours in the carriage: the conversation was pleasing; they talked a great deal to me about their papa and mamma, and with a sensibility that enchanted me. They listened also with inexpressible pleasure to the various incidents which I related of Madame and Monseigneur. Upon the subject of some manufactures that we saw, they displayed considerable intelligence, and a very active and laudable curiosity.—Our reading this evening was equally agreeable with that of yesterday.—The Duke de Chartres has done a thing which it affords me extreme gratification to record in this journal. Without the smallest instigation directly or indirectly from any person, absolutely of his own accord, he gave, three days ago, all the money he had, secretly to Delisle, for the release of a poor prisoner; and without speaking to any body of this transaction. The next day he was told of a very unfortunate man who was in the utmost want of immediate succour. As he had no more money of his own, he desired me to give him leave to borrow some of M. Lebrun, which I granted. M. Lebrun was not at all aware what had become of the Duke's own money, and therefore by no means approved



approved his giving in this instance money not taken from his own pocket. The prince avoided all explanation of the reason; and it was not till three days had elapsed that he this evening told me the use to which he had applied his money, rightly judging that, if it were incumbent on him to confess his faults, he ought also, as a happiness he owed to me, to confide to me his good actions, as it is the only way in which he can recompense my cares: he related the circumstance without verbosity, without ostentation, with an extreme simplicity, and in a very few words. I strove not to conceal the impression his recital made on me: he saw my tears flow, and he mingled his with a sensibility, the remembrance of which still penetrates my heart, employing at the same time the most amiable and touching expressions! Dear child, never shall I forget this evening.—The Duke de Montpensier has also done a very charming thing. I had told Cæsar, with whom I was dissatisfied, that the next time we went to the play he should not accompany us. The Duke de Montpensier informed him in private, that when the time came he would ask leave not to go himself, and would stay at home with him, which must have been a very considerable sacrifice, as a French play is an amusement of which the prince is extremely fond. I learned this from Cæsar himself, whose heart was very sensibly moved. How truly do we merit the esteem and regard of others, when, devoid of selfishness, we can thus sacrifice our pleasures to friendship! Lovely children, continue ever to act thus. What

a fund of happiness do you prepare for yourselves, *and all those who love you!*

I have only to reproach the Duke de Chartres for an instance of absurd laughter, which was without reason, without inclination, and evidently forced.

---

16 October 1786.

**Y**ESTERDAY and to-day were both excellent.—Yesterday a person called upon me who has a very disagreeable way of speaking: the Duke de Montpensier did not laugh aloud, but he tittered with his brother, who, instead of perceiving the folly of this conduct, had the weakness to join in it. Such manners are very unbecoming and disgraceful: if you continue them, every body will hate you, and will consider you beside as devoid of understanding. You quickly recovered yourselves, and fortunately no one observed your weakness but myself. In every thing else you have been very amiable, particularly the Duke de Montpensier, who displayed in conversation a considerable share of good sense.

---

17 October 1786.

**A** GOOD day. This evening my brother-in-law came to see me. The Duke de Montpensier spoke to him in a very pleasing and graceful manner. The Duke de Chartres was perfectly silent. I always observe that when the Duke de Montpensier speaks first, the Duke de Chartres has nothing to say; an absurd

surd bashfulness that appears the more uncivil from the contrast of his brother's politeness.

---

19 September 1786.

**Y**ESTERDAY and to-day were both good. In the carriage to day accompanied by M. de Saint Pierre, you both talked, particularly the Duke de Montpensier, of the little arrangements of your dress, your studies and your masters. All this was ill timed before a stranger. We should never speak of these petty details but when we are alone, because they are tiresome to those who have no interest in them, and because it is unpolite to introduce a subject of conversation in which the rest of the company cannot join.

---

22 September 1786.

YOUR interest at length obliges me to give you my sentiments of a certain character\*. I have never mentioned his name to you but with the utmost esteem; I have repeated a thousand times the gratitude and attachment you owe him, that he has an excellent heart,

\* I refer to a person † who, every day during a lesson which lasted for three quarters of an hour, and in which I did not preside, had long been accustomed to traduce me to the princes. This incident will serve to shew a part of the mortifications which, in the midst of so many cares and labours, disturbed the peace of my mind, and how far I extended my forbearance and moderation.

† It appears from a subsequent part of the work to be the Abbé Guyot, and the translator has therefore, in the course of the article, supplied the name.

an extreme probity; and I have said this at a time when he displayed towards me the most open enmity: the only thing I have ever permitted myself to say against him is, that he had a mode of speaking which you ought not to imitate; as for example, the continually making use of the expression, *if I dared say this*. I farther told you, at the time when we were upon ill terms, that he did not love me, but that this was excusable on account of his regret for the loss of M. Bonnard. This, without exception, is all I have ever spoken against him. After we were reconciled, I frequently told you and with perfect sincerity, that he was good, sensible, that I loved him, and that you would act wisely when you should settle in life to confide in and consult him. I shall now lay before you the inferences I derive from these facts,

What has been my conduct since the period that you were intrusted to my care? To consecrate myself entirely to my pupils, to devote all my time to them, to renounce every thing for their sakes, even the society of my daughters so pleasing and so dear to my heart. I have been unremittingly employed in your service, even when I did not see you, in preparing lessons for you, in writing all the exercises that you were to learn by heart, and volumes of abridgments and extracts that you were to read to me. What principles have I taught you? To be religious; and to you, who have been the constant witnesses of my life, I may say, that, to the christian precepts and instructions which I have given you, I have added, what is of more worth, a religious example.

ample. Upon this subject you are acquainted with various particulars, of which my dearest friends are totally ignorant. Though you have not always seconded my cares relatively to your education, yet I have exerted so much zeal, and so successfully contrived to make even your amusements instructive, that your minds are much better informed than is common at your age. What are the moral sentiments which I have inculcated upon you? Have I not uniformly endeavoured to strengthen your confidence in and attachment to Monseigneur and Madame; to inspire you with friendship for your brothers, your sister, your relations, and your preceptors; to lead you by every possible way, by example; and by exhortation, to the practice of kindness, forbearance, humanity and charity? What has been my conduct towards the Abbé Guyot? He owes his place to me; it was to me the Ch. de \* \* \* \* applied to obtain it for him; it was I who spoke of him to Monseigneur and Madame. Since he has been under my orders, I have patiently endured his ill humour, his incivilities and rudeness, which have been public; I have treated him with all possible respect, and have never spoken but with encomium of his character. Since our reconciliation, believing him to be as sincere as I knew myself to be, I have entertained a friendship for him, I have procured him every convenience and comfort to which he could pretend, as for example, the prevailing on Monseigneur and Madame to admit him to their table when in the country, &c. . . .

What has been his conduct towards me since the period of our reconciliation only? He has professed the warmest friendship, he has praised me upon all occasions in the most flattering terms: you have yourselves witnessed it, you have seen him shed tears when he has asked me if I loved him; you heard him, a few days ago, say to me, upon the subject of M. de \*\*\*\* that I was generous and good, and that I possessed an elevated soul. You saw the indifference with which I received this adulation, and, contrary to my usual feelings, the coldness with which I replied that I did not like such high encomiums on so simple an occasion. You were witnesses of his sending me a box of flowers, with a tale, which I have still in my possession, and which has been read to you, wherein he ascribes to me *every grace, every virtue, every talent*; speaks of me as a *fairy*, and says that I have painted my character in *my writings which will be transmitted to posterity*: and yet this very man, when alone with you, mangles my reputation, calumniates my character, holds up to ridicule not only me, but all that I love, endeavouring by these means to deprive me of the confidence and friendship, and even the esteem, which you owe me! He tells you that there are many principles in my works which I do not entertain, particularly those by which Monseigneur and Madame are *dazzled* (and which of consequence are the best); and that I have said a number of things which I do not believe. . . . .

He accuses me of falsehood, of being artful, of announcing projects which I have no intention



tion to execute. And of whom does he tell you all these things? Of the person to whom the Duke and Duchefs d'Orleans have delegated their authority over you; of a person whom this choice alone ought to render respectable in your eyes; of a person to whom he is subordinate, and who has rendered him services; in short, of a person whom he affects to esteem and love, and upon whom he is continually heaping praises and demonstrations of friendship. . . . .

If, after these facts, I were to ask his dismissal of the Duke and Duchefs d'Orleans, I should readily obtain it; and I believe also, as they both read this journal, and as it is my duty to keep nothing a secret from them which relates to you, that the first impulse of their minds will be to desire the Abbé to withdraw himself; but I shall request them to let things remain as they are. . . . .

Notwithstanding this conduct of the Abbé Guyot respecting me, I believe him to be incapable of inculcating any bad principles on you, as to any other point. His enmity to me, founded upon little motives of envy, blinds his eyes and renders him unjust. He thinks beside that, when your education shall be really finished, I shall still retain my station, and busy myself in the care of governing you. This he wishes to prevent by depriving me of your esteem, whereby he thinks to establish his own credit. All these calculations are false, but it is thus that self-interest and the passions reason. I shall observe a strict silence, and he shall never

know that I am informed of his treachery. Confide no longer in him, behave to him with esteem and complaisance; tell me no more of his deceit, let us dismiss the subject and live in harmony. . . . .

He has farther told you that the Duchess d'Orleans has no confidence in me, and that she only affects it for the sake of peace. This is one of the blackest of his calumnies. Believe me, if I had not been as certain as of my own existence, that Monseigneur and Madame were of one mind respecting their children, as they have ever been as to every thing of importance, I would never have undertaken the charge of you. Monseigneur would never have chosen a person who had not been agreeable to Madame; the choice was made in perfect harmony with her, and determined by her alone. If she had not strongly desired it, he would never have made it; and I can with truth assure you, that, before the thought occurred to him, Madame was anxious to have a daughter that she might intrust her education to my hands. In the sequel, when the resolution was taken, she was more eager and earnest upon the subject than Monseigneur. Such is the exact truth, which Madame will confirm to you. The ideas therefore which have been suggested to you are false and mischievous. A woman and a mother like the Duchess d'Orleans, ought to divide with her husband the authority over her children; and so great is his esteem and tenderness for her, that, in every thing relative to you, in obeying the one, I have obeyed the other; I have taken the orders of each indifferently,

indifferently, both having the same power, both having but one will respecting you. Such are the fruits of the perfect union which reigns between them, and which is founded upon sentiments too affectionate and too solid ever to be shaken. . . . .

---

*26 October 1786.*

I HAVE forgotten to observe that the Duke de Montpensier, eight or ten days ago, delivered a prisoner from confinement with the savings of his pocket money. I only learned the circumstance the day before yesterday.

---

*11 November 1786.*

THE journal has been discontinued on account of your indisposition, which has confined you almost entirely to your chamber. You have been employed however, and the time has not been lost.

---

*Sunday, 12 November 1786.*

THIS morning the Duke de Montpensier resumed his studies, and respecting them I have no reproach to make him; but in the evening, being the day of my receiving company, his behaviour was not at all amiable. He took no part in the conversation, but trifled and played like a child three years old. At supper I spoke to him with extreme mildness upon the subject, and the little which I said in

a low tone of voice brought tears into his eyes. This did not please me, as it shewed a degree of susceptibility which I greatly disapprove. Sensibility is a very attractive quality, because it proceeds from the soul: susceptibility is a very disagreeable defect, because self-love alone is the cause of it. I wish you to reflect on the nature of susceptibility, in what it consists, how it discovers itself, what are the inconveniences which result from it in our intercourse with others, and to write a definition of it. When your brother's health is established, we will compose together, as I have promised you. You have so excellent a heart, my dear child, and so much firmness of character, that it will be very easy for you to correct your faults. You ought to apply yourself to this with the utmost ardour; for what will the most splendid talents and the most perfect knowledge avail you, without the immutable principles of virtue?

The Duke de Chartres requested me to send a supply of wood to Fontaines, one of his coachmen who has had the misfortune to break his leg. I am pleased with this new proof of goodness in the prince: the request was cheerfully granted, and I have sent beside, on the part of the princes, a gratuity of two hundred francs to this poor man. I must add, that if the accident had happened while he was driving your carriage, or while he was employed in any of the duties of his station, you ought to have made him a much more liberal compensation: but the propriety of this you will both feel equally with myself.

I ought

I ought to observe in this place, that Madame<sup>c</sup> who first read the account of what the Duke de Chartres had disclosed to me respecting the Abbé Guyot, was of opinion that he could by no means retain his place, and that it was due to her children to punish such an example of perfidy. I requested her to take the Journal to Fontainebleau, and consult Monseigneur upon the subject; but he returned before she had an opportunity of speaking to him. I related to him the fact, and expressed my wish that the Abbé might not be dismissed. He asked me what the Duchess d'Orleans thought of the proceeding; I informed him, and he replied that he was of the same opinion: the Abbé Guyot was accordingly dismissed.

The Duke de Montpensier has given me his definition of *susceptibility*, which is entitled to commendation; but he has not been sufficiently minute. To express ourselves about trifles in a multiplicity of words, and to discuss in a dry and laconical manner things upon which we ought to expatiate, are in general proofs of a shallow understanding and a want of reflection; and this is commonly the fault of the Duke de Chartres. When he shall exert more thought he will display a superior mind and a more lively imagination. I will write myself very shortly a definition of *susceptibility* in this journal.

---

Sunday, 26 November, 1786.

THE Duke de Chartres was presented to-day. He conducted himself with the utmost propriety. His answers to the questions which were

were put to him, were modest, unembarrassed, and happy. He observed very exactly every thing I had told him.. At his age, docility, and a desire to please, are sure of succeeding. M. de Gouvernet is a man of strong mind, of information, and of elevated sentiments and manners: embrace every opportunity of conversing with him; he will I am sure be surprised to find you possessed of so much knowledge and good sense. In short talk more at all times: loquacity is insupportable; but it is only by a fondness for conversation that we can be successful in the world, or pass for men of sense. When my aunt told you the story of the box of colours, you did not at all interest yourselves in it, and scarcely gave yourselves the trouble to hear it. You ought, on the contrary, to have listened in this case with attention, to have entered into her sentiments, and to have made some short observations on what she said. Be less inanimate, less cold, and join more in conversation. You were desirous of accompanying me in this visit, and you behaved with the greatest indifference and unconcern. Be more mindful of your promises, and afford me the satisfaction of seeing what you ought to be, after so much advice and instruction.

---

5 December, 1786.

**I** HAVE been indisposed; but you have come to me regularly, and your studies have been continued. Two days excepted, every thing has been well; but I observed to-day that the Duke de Chartres relapsed into his former indolence.



dolence. He has promised that it shall be the last time: we shall see. . . . .

---

10 December, 1786.

**SINCE** the fifth, I have been perfectly satisfied with the Duke de Chartres. The Duke de Montpensier has affected to be ill, and has kept his chamber. To-day he returned to his studies. He has ingenuously acknowledged that he was not ill, and that the pleasure of dining every day with Madame, and of doing nothing induced him to make this pretence, which is very blameable: all artifice indeed is extremely reprehensible. The Duke de Montpensier has so much natural candour, that we have overlooked this fault; but if he ever practise it a second time, we shall be less indulgent. Beside, Madame has resolved, when her children are indisposed, that they shall in future never dine with her, but shall be kept to their apartments, shall observe a strict course of diet, and shall see nobody. Now and then, exclusive of our Monday dinners, when I shall have been perfectly satisfied with your studies, I will obtain for you the recompence of dining at the house of Madame; but this is an extraordinary favour which can only be merited by constant application.—M. Lebrun has again informed me that the princes, particularly the Duke de Montpensier, are too much occupied about their dress, their buttons and other ornaments. This attention would be ridiculous in a woman; in a man it is contemptible. Their bills are also much more extravagant than they ought

ought to be. Since then the princes abuse in every way the permission I have granted them of making their own purchases without consulting me, I shall for the present withdraw this permission; and I therefore forbid them to purchase, directly, or indirectly, any thing whatever, without my previous consent; and I shall lay an injunction upon their people to execute no commissions of this kind without an order from me or M. Lebrun.— When they are become more reasonable, and I perceive nothing in their conduct that is frivolous or effeminate, their liberty in this respect shall be restored to them.

---

8 January 1787.

**M**Y heart has received so terrible a shock, that I have been unable to continue this journal. You may derive my children, from my misfortune, great and useful lessons. You have seen, and had you lived in the world the example would have been more striking to you, how much the union of virtue, goodness, talents and youth, creates esteem and love. The person whose death I shall ever lament, has been universally regretted, and in a way the most affectionate and the most honourable to her memory. Though she possessed every accomplishment that could excite envy, every body loved her, because she was virtuous and good. The reputation she has left behind her ought to be flattering to my pupils. Remember that she became thus virtuous and irreproachable by following my counsels, and because

cause she entertained the most elevated sentiments of religion. In me you see an example of the consolations it can inspire. It is certain that without religion, which assures me that this dear child is perfectly and for ever happy, without religion, which enjoins acquiescence and resignation, I could never have supported this calamity. In short you may learn from this event the extreme frailty of human life; that youth, health, strength, beauty cannot insure its duration. It is necessary therefore that we should be always ready to resign it into the hands of him who has created us. My children should endeavour to afford me some consolation: I have great need of it. They ought to be touched with the sentiment which leads me to resume my lessons, and to suppress my grief, that I might be useful to them; but this grief will ever find a place in my heart. Recompense then my courage and my cares by redoubling your application: when I make so many efforts for you, do something in return for your unhappy friend. Your hearts are grateful and good; and I am certain that the idea will have considerable influence over you.

. . . . .

---

18 January, 1787.

THE Duchefs d'Orleans tells me that the Duke de Chartres ate the other day half a cake which I requested him to take to her. May I ask his highness what name we should give to such practices at his age?—I have another observation to make to the Duke de Chartres

Chartres respecting a circumstance which has struck me, because it discovers in him a want of gratitude and of penetration. Mademoiselle de Bruhant said yesterday that she believed me to have great command of myself. Without being asked your opinion, you replied that I had not *too much of this*. You meant to say that my temper was warm and that you discerned it. Had this been true, was it becoming in you to expose a fault which my friend believed me not to possess? If, when I was present, any person should ascribe to you a good quality, which you had not, you would think it unkind in me to attempt to destroy this opinion: in the mean time I should be less unjust than you, because you owe me a great many obligations, and I owe you none. I know that the Abbé Guyot has often repeated to you that I am *hasty, violent, and never mistress of myself*; but if you were capable of reflection and could judge for yourself, you would perceive that this pretended warmth was the character of my physiognomy only, and of certain manners which are natural to me, and not of my mind, and that it is impossible to display more mildness, forbearance and lenity. At this moment in particular you ought to have a lively sense of the command I have of myself; since, for the sake of your instruction, I have so quickly resumed our long and fatiguing lessons and extracts, at a time too when my health is so deranged that bleeding has been prescribed, and I am obliged during the night to have the attendance of a nurse. Such is my conduct, and yet you say that I am not *mistress of myself*. This extreme

extreme ingratitude is of little consequence to me: my cares are pure and disinterested as my heart; I expect nothing from men; it is not for any earthly reward that I labour; but your happiness is dear to me, and it grieves me to reflect that, if you preserve this unthinking and ungrateful character, you will never be loved and never deserve to be loved\*.

---

20 January, 1787.

SINCE the thirteenth of this month, you have both behaved remarkably well. The Duke de Chartres has had various conversations with me, in which he has evinced a sound judgment and great sensibility. All the faults with which he is chargeable proceed from want of reflection; for he abounds in good sense, and has an excellent heart. I conjure him therefore to reflect more: it is a habit indispensably necessary, particularly in him.

---

26 January 1787.

THIS morning the Duke de Montpensier, after returning from the academy, instead of coming to my apartment, amused himself for nearly half an hour in the antichamber, though he knew that Monseigneur and Madame were with me. I told him my sentiments of his conduct, but he made no reply. This afternoon

\* There is a great deal of bitterness in these reproaches for a word spoken in jest; but I was unhappy and indispensed, and of consequence easily irritated, and I always expressed myself to my pupils as I felt at the moment.

he



he expressed his regret for his fault. He ought to have done this at the moment: an offence is aggravated when we delay as long as we can to repair it.—This evening the Duke de Chartres set his hair on fire. His brother hastened to his succour, and extinguished the flame; but uttering at the same time two or three petty shrieks. These cries are useless, and give an air of effeminacy that, in a man, is very contemptible. We should apply instant succour, and do every thing which the danger demands, but we should always avoid these puerile demonstrations of terror.

---

3 February 1787.

THE Journal of M. Lebrun complains of commissions given to your valets: I absolutely forbid these commissions during your lessons... The princes received in a very ungracious manner the physician whom M. Saiffert introduced to them. They ought to have asked him some questions about his book, what was its general plan, and of what subjects it treated. The first time that the princes do not receive in a becoming manner the persons who shall be presented to them, I will inflict on them some penance. . . .

---

9 February 1787.

..... NOTHING can be a greater proof of a little mind, than the fixing our attention upon the absurdities and defects of others,



others, without observing what is estimable, distinguished, and virtuous in their characters. On the contrary we should make it our study to discover merit; for the best proof that we possess it ourselves, is the knowing how to distinguish, honour and applaud it in others.

---

10 February 1787.

I HAVE been obliged to tell the Duke de Chartres that he ought to have made enquiries respecting the health of M\*\*\*\*, who was ill, and who has apartments in the Palais Royal. Will there never be an end to my task of reminding you of the duties of friendship, of gratitude and of common civility?

. . . . .

---

Tuesday, 1 March 1787.

. . . . . THE morning was a very reprehensible one as to the Duke de Chartres, who relapsed into his old habit of indolence, of which M. Lebrun makes heavy complaints. To the language lessons, particularly the Italian and English, he paid no attention. I give you notice that there will be no more going to the play, till I shall perceive an unwearyed application, and an activity equal to your present indolence. It is not just that I should be ever attentive to the pleasures of those who so badly requite my cares.

---

15 March 1787.

IN general the princes have behaved very well, particularly the Duke de Chartres, who  
has

has displayed an air of vivacity and animation that makes him charming. M. Lebrun still complains of the disposition of the Duke de Montpensier, who pouts and is out of humour upon the most trivial occasion, and who would have every thing subservient to his minutest will. I forewarn him that the next time I hear a complaint of this kind, I will punish him very severely . . . . .

---

15 March 1787.

**T**HE Duke de Chartres discharges every duty with zeal and pleasure, and I have nothing but encomiums to bestow on him. I am dissatisfied with his brother, and he shall not accompany me on Saturday to breakfast at the house of Madame de Boufflers. . . . .

---

19 March 1787.

**I** CANNOT bestow too many praises on the Duke de Chartres for his gentleness, his application, his sincerity, his polite and engaging manners, and the whole of his conduct. The Duke de Montpensier has behaved well enough in general, except some instances of petulance which are very reprehensible. If he display any more of them, I shall be obliged to punish him with the utmost rigour. In his behaviour to me he is uniformly mild and submissive; and I therefore trust that my admonitions and entreaties will have so much influence.

ence with him as to supersede the necessity of punishments, which it would be very painful to me to employ.

---

4 May 1787.

THE behaviour of the princes has for some days been irreproachable.

---

*Saint Leu, 14 May 1787.*

MY health and our occupations have not permitted me to continue the journal, which I now resume for the sake of relating that, on the evening of the fifth, the Duke de Chartres informed me, without my questioning him in any sort, that M. Lebrun, respecting some arrangement which I had made for the princes, had told him that had the affair been left to him, he would have managed it much better. The Duke de Chartres added, that, after the affair of the Abbé Guyot, he should never hear the smallest animadversion on my conduct, from his preceptors, without informing me of it. I applauded his motive: I added, that this incongruity of M. Lebrun appeared to me a circumstance little worthy of attention; but that, to avoid a repetition of it and to preserve the most perfect candour, it was necessary that he should be informed that the Duke de Chartres had related it to me: the Duke undertook to inform him, and executed his purpose with considerable firmness. M. Lebrun has spoken of it in person to me and in his journal, and he acknowledges the exact truth

truth of what the Duke de Chartres had told me. I ought to repeat in this place, that, after the cruel adventure of the Abbé Guyot, my child has acted upon this occasion with perfect propriety; but that without this circumstance, he should have contented himself with putting a stop to the conversation of M. Lebrun, and not have mentioned it to me. When you hear in company the persons whom you are bound to love spoken slightly of, you ought not patiently to suffer it; you ought to shew your displeasure, but you should never repeat such conversations to the party accused, nor indeed to any person whatever; otherwise you will be the occasion of a thousand dissensions, and will obtain for yourself a very ill name. There is but one exception to this rule, and that is when the honour of the person whom we love is attacked by calumnies, from which, if informed of them, he may be able to exculpate himself; but if he cannot do this, we afflict him to no purpose by the information, and we ought to be silent. As I have perfect confidence in you, and as I am sure, not only that those who speak evil of me will be unable to convince you, but also that you will never silently endure this, any more than your brother, I commit equally to you both the care of defending me. I rely upon you without the smallest apprehension, esteeming you sufficiently to know that you will act with fervour and zeal, and in such a manner that no one will ever dare to make before you a second attempt upon my character. I request you however to avoid the mentioning to me in future any thing that may be

said

said of this nature, supposing such a thing to happen again, which I do not believe. I feel great pleasure in giving to my dear young friends a proof of my confidence and esteem, and I am persuaded that it will make an impression on them, and that they will in every way merit it.

---

. . . : . . . . .  
 . . . . . 27 January 1788.

. . . . . IN all cases, men, and particularly princes, make a great risk and disgrace themselves when they employ towards others injurious expressions: it is always wrong to give people to understand that you think them stupid and dull, but it is unpardonable in plain terms to tell them so. Such discourse is of little consequence in the mouth of a woman; but in that of a man, and particularly of a prince, it is shocking and unpardonable. Vile flatterers will laugh, but every man of sense and honesty will regard the prince who should practise it, as gross, unfeeling, and devoid of understanding. As I know the Duke de Montpensier to possess an excellent understanding and heart, I flatter myself that these reflections will have their weight with him. In returning from Rainci he fell asleep: he would have been much more amiable if he had talked to the ladies who were in the carriage. At all times he has too little desire to please, though he has a thousand opportunities of succeeding and of making himself loved.

THE

1 February 1788.

. . . . . THE princes are not sufficiently polite to their teachers.—They ought this evening to have detained for a moment M. and Madame de Chatelux, to have shewn them some marks of friendship, and to have made a thousand enquiries respecting the Duke and Duchess d'Orleans \*.

. . . . .

7 February 1788.

. . . . . M. LEBRUN complains in his Journal that you speak rudely to your valets. I very seriously request that this may not happen again. The Duke de Montpensier should reflect that the best way of qualifying himself for the first rank of society, is by the constant exercise of civility and kindness.

. . . . .

. . . . .

25 February 1788.

WITH the preceding days I have no fault to find. But the Duke de Chartres has written today a very paltry letter to the Duke d'Orleans, full of absurd repetitions, and very dull beside. It concludes with assuring him of his *friendship*. I have told the prince a thousand times that we never employ this expression but to our equals; and that towards a father, beside being too familiar, it is too weak. We

\* Who were at Rainci.

say



say in this case, that we *esteem* and *love* him, we assure him of our *affection*; but we never speak of friendship towards a person to whom we owe the utmost respect and tenderness. I am obliged to be always repeating to you the same things. When will you have a just idea of the decorums of life?

You ought, both of you, now that you see Monseigneur and Madame but once a week, to ask leave to write to them regularly in the intervals. But you think of nothing yourselves, and it is necessary to prompt you in every thing.

10 March 1788.

WE have added to other exercises that of climbing a rope fastened to the ceiling. The Duke de Chartres succeeds best; in the mean time the two princes and Cæsar climb to the extent of the rope.

31 March 1788.

THE Duke de Montpensier has formed a connection at Spa, and is careful to maintain it: though he does not see M. de Romanoff, he is mindful of him and interests himself warmly in every thing that concerns him. The letters which he writes to him are charming.

The other day the Duke de Chartres asked something of me on the part of M\*\*\*; I was busy and returned an abrupt answer, which the Duke repeated to him word for word, instead of expressing the sense of it in the most polite terms, which any other person would have done in his place. If he does these things in his intercourse with mankind, he will be regarded as totally devoid both of good nature and good sense. Such conduct is very unamiable.

. . . . .

11 May, the day of Pentecost, and of  
the Baptism of my dear children.

. . . . .

THE Duke de Chartres purchasing lately some fancy waistcoats was desirous, without any decent pretext, of giving one to a person of some rank in life, which I prevented. To excuse our making a trifling present to such a person, it is necessary that the occasion be a graceful one; as for example, his having praised a thing which he did not know how to procure, otherwise our politeness is misapplied and absurd.

. . . . .

Yesterday I conducted you, never more to behold such a spectacle, to a bear fight, in which the animal was torn to pieces by dogs. I saw with pleasure your indignation, and particularly the energetic feelings of the Duke de Montpensier, at the cruelty and dastardliness of this combat, which is extremely unequal.

The

The Duke de Chartres, of his own accord, spoke to me of a nosegay woman who had, out of charity, taken a little orphan girl under her care. The prince desired me to do something for this woman, who is poor, and we agreed that he should give her twelve francs a month.

---

16 May 1788.

THE preceding days have been tolerable.— In the distribution of their sweetmeats\* the princes forgot Madame Defrois and M. Rochambault, which is totally inexcusable. I was very sorry for this omission, and have made them repair it.

. . . . .

---

*Saint Leu, 26 May 1788.*

ON my arrival here, a few days since, I had a charming conversation with you both, in which you assured me, without my saying any thing upon the subject, that it was your wish, and that you would ask leave, to continue with me at least six months longer than the allotted period, that is, till you shall be respectively seventeen years and a half old. This desire is honourable both to your understanding and your hearts, and has affected me in a very sensible manner.

\* Given on such anniversaries as that of Baptism.

## DEFINITION OF SUSCEPTIBILITY.

**A** SUSCEPTIBLE or irritable person is he who readily takes offence, and is angry without cause or for the merest trifle. He receives a jest ungraciously, replies to it in a serious or petulant tone, and cannot brook the slightest and most innocent pleasantry. When he wishes to conceal his resentment, he blushes and is embarrassed, which gives him a very awkward and silly appearance. But he commonly expresses his anger openly, or he sulks and pouts in silence. If any persons whisper or smile in company, he conceives that they are talking of, or laughing at him. He always puts an ill construction on a word, a nod, a smile, a look which he does not understand. If his friend shew any little mark of preference to another, he is offended; he wishes to engross upon all occasions every kind of civility to himself; a trifling instance of forgetfulness, of inattention, of want of politeness, he considers as insults, and they excite his ill humour and resentment. If we do not return him visit for visit, or answer with punctuality every letter, he is piqued and gives himself airs. In short, jealous with his friends, captious in society, he wearies and torments those whom he loves, and disgusts every other person. He can never be amiable in society, where he is sure to introduce asperity, ill humour, reproaches, quarrels, and constraint. No character can be more disagreeable than this, and it is commonly the portion of a very moderate understanding and a narrow soul. . . . .

M. LEBRUN

28 May 1788.

. . . . . M. LEBRUN justly complains of the joy you expressed yesterday upon seeing a dinner which you liked. You are really too old for this, and should reserve your exultations for things of genuine worth. There are many persons who, from a defective education and want of thought, imagine that they do a very polite thing in proclaiming their gluttony: but I would have my children consider that, in the eyes of every rational being, nothing can be more absurd than to boast of any sort of vice. If we are so unfortunate as to have contracted a vicious habit, there is at least no necessity of adding to it the silly weakness of seeming to regard it as a source of vanity. . . . .

. . . . . I am continually astonished to find, after all the pains that are bestowed upon you, how very deficient you are in politeness. Be assured however that no accomplishment can be more noble, and that the want of it is a proof of a gross and uncultivated mind. With the education you will have received, what will the world think of you, not only if you are not polite, but if you are not eminently so, superior in this respect to other men?—M. Lebrun charges the Duke de Montpensier with having had the indiscretion to read part of a letter written by the Duke de Chartres, and the rudeness to tell him that it was *very stupid*. This is not the first time that the Duke de Montpensier has made use of uncivil expressions to his brother: for the next fault of this kind he shall be punished very severely.—M. Lebrun accuses him also of saying at table, when I was not present, some  

E 3
dirty

dirty things, a species of pleasantry that is at all times ignoble, and particularly unpardonable at meals. M. Lebrun adds, that the Duke de Montpensier makes too frequent attempts at wit in order to excite a laugh. Such attempts are commonly ridiculous and deprive the mind of all true nobility. The Duke de Montpensier is naturally possessed of dignity and taste; he will feel, I trust, that the part of a buffoon is not suited to his character, and will not confound the sprightly sallies of the mind with the gross and noisy mirth of bad company, or of persons alike destitute both of delicacy and of sense.—The Duchess d'Orleans arrived here yesterday after a fortnight's absence, and you both left her and walked in the garden.—There will be a great deal of company here to-morrow: I entreat you to think of this, and to take care that you conduct yourselves properly. I shall keep a strict eye upon you, and you will afford me the greatest pleasure if you are polite and amiable.

---

13 June 1788.

**W**E have made a very pleasant excursion to La Trappe, during which I was perfectly satisfied with you. You have been almost equally faultless since our return.—M. Lebrun accuses the princes in his Journal of not having had the civility a few days ago to offer Pamela any of the strawberries which they gathered for their breakfast. Is it possible that at your age you should be so devoid of politeness, and should derive more pleasure from the selfish gratification of eating strawberries, than from



an act of kindness and civility? Quit these vulgar practices which place you below your age, and which are so little compatible with graceful manners and an elevated mind.—M. Lebrun farther complains that whenever he reproves the princes for any fault, they always make some reply: it is time that this should have an end; the next indecorum of this kind shall be punished with the utmost rigour.—I give you notice that if I am not perfectly satisfied with you from the present moment to the evening of the play, you shall not be permitted to go.

---

*La Mothe, 14 August 1788.*

**F**OR two days past the Duke de Chartres has shewn such a total want of application that I have been obliged to punish him by making him sup alone in his chamber. During a period of more than three weeks that we have been here, you have made no enquiry whatever respecting any of our friends at Paris, nor commissioned me to send on your part the least compliment to them. This is really inconceivable. You have equally neglected to write to the Duke de Penthièvre. What value do you suppose will be set on your friendship, if you are guilty of such omissions? The only thing for which you are entitled to praise is your mode of bathing and swimming in the sea, without effeminacy or fear, and in cold and tempestuous weather. I ought also to add that, since your last journey, you have been desirous of curing yourself of luxurious habits, and have therefore slept upon a small mat placed

on the floor. Your beds and your mattresses are laid aside, and you are perfectly reconciled to this change. I congratulate you: there is no greater proof of manliness than to despise every sensual indulgence. By this conduct you afford me the greatest pleasure, and I cannot too much applaud you.

---

*Paris, 22 October 1788.*

**M.** De Chatelux has been ill for this fortnight, and you have never thought of sending to enquire how he did, which is truly shameful. I am for ever asking you the same question: what claims have you to the attention of others? When you see your most intimate acquaintance, you have nothing agreeable to say to them; when they are out of your sight, you never think of them, even though you know them to be in pain and sickness. I request you to send every day to make enquiries respecting his health, and that to-morrow in your way to Belle Chasse, you also pay him a visit: you will be at the Academy \* a quarter of an hour later on this account.

---

*23 October 1788.*

**A** VERY tolerable day. You tell me that you have sent many times to make enquiries respecting the health of M. de Chatelux; but you have not done it with the regularity and

\* We gave the name of Academy to our painting and drawing, because all the children learned this art together.

perseverance

perseverance which you ought.—To inspire you with greater emulation I shall revive a plan which I instituted formerly, and in which I was very successful with my children. I shall give them prizes for three sorts of excellence: 1. For humanity and good humour. 2. For assiduity. 3. For drawing. Under each of these classes there shall be a first and a second prize, and they shall all be distributed on the 25th of January in every year. The first distribution shall be next January, so that you will have but three months to merit them. You will understand that, in order to obtain the first and most flattering prize, the prize of humanity and good humour, it will be necessary that you should discharge every duty of beneficence, friendship and gratitude; that you should suffer no opportunity to escape you of doing good; that you should be affectionate, obliging and attentive to those you ought to love, distinguished in company for good manners, towards the servants for politeness, indulgence and kindness, towards your masters for deference and respect; that you should say no harm of any body; that you should never allow yourselves in satire or contempt, never contradict, never be out of humour, never express yourselves in a quick, a loud, or a sharp voice, with airs of imperiousness and impertinence, &c. The first prize of humanity and good humour shall be a standish of sandalwood with my cypher. It shall be furnished with paper, pen-knife, knives of other sorts and crayons: it shall have in the inside of the lid these words written in letters of gold: *Prize of humanity and good humour.* The person who

shall earn this glorious prize, shall also be allowed to give a breakfast or a supper to the rest, and I will supply him with money sufficient for the liberation of two prisoners, which he shall effect in person, and who will be indebted for this happiness to a conquest thus gained over the passions and a successful effort of self-government. I am sure that this idea will alone be sufficient to excite my dear children, who have so much goodness of heart, to do every thing in their power to deserve so honourable and transporting a prize. The second prize of humanity and good humour shall be a tooth-pick case of sandal-wood, mounted with gold, with a case of my own working.

2. The prize of assiduity shall be a handsome and large box containing every necessary for writing, for painting in water colours, for drawing with black and red lead, and working in straw and in hair, together with several books of blank paper beautifully bound. At the bottom of the box these words shall be written: *First prize of assiduity*. The second prize shall be a box of pasteboard containing materials for writing.

3. The first prize for drawing shall be a handsome English pocket-book, and in one of its pockets a medallion in camaieu. The second prize shall be a beautiful box of colours for painting in camaieu and in water colours. I must particularly observe that if more than one person appear intitled to the first prize in any of the classes, more than one first prize shall be given; nor could I possibly have a greater pleasure than that of giving twenty-one. I shall not however double the second prizes. If it should happen  
that

that the claims of different persons appear precisely equal, the prize must be determined by drawing of lots. You are all certain that I shall judge with impartiality. Beside, as the journals will be evidence of your conduct in each instance, the decision will be made from positive facts. I advise you therefore beforehand to prepare your minds for it, and to receive it with resignation. If those to whom the decision may be unfavourable, shall acquiesce without murmuring or shewing any signs of ill humour, they will prove at least that they are capable of justice and generosity, and this will be considered as something estimable and virtuous, and will greatly contribute to the possibility of their acquiring the prizes of the following year, as it will be written in terms of the highest commendation in the journals. Think, my children, that the object of your ambition, as to these prizes, should not be merely the acquisition of elegant and useful presents, but also the obtaining honourable testimonies of esteem and unequivocal proofs of your virtues and your good conduct. You ought therefore to affix the highest value to these rewards, which are emblematical of what will one day be your fortune when you shall be settled in life. Then honours, glory, the most flattering distinctions, the friendship of those about you, and the public esteem will be the recompense of your talents, your merit, and your virtues. To obtain however this recompense, it is necessary in the mean time that you ardently aspire after and know how to merit the prizes that are now held up to your ambition.

AN

24 October 1788

AN excellent day. The institution of prizes has excited your gratitude and other sentiments which charm me. I shall add to them a fourth prize for *self-denial*. If, counting from the twenty-fifth of the present month to the eighth of November inclusive, you shall conduct yourselves as you have done for these five days past, I will give you an additional day of relaxation separate from our Sundays, Mondays and Fridays\*. You shall draw lots among yourselves, and the person who shall have the fortunate ticket, shall determine where we are to go and what we are to see. The hours for this excursion shall be from one o'clock to five. We will dine on the road; and the person male or female, to whom the lot has fallen, shall controul the dinner and do the honours of the feast. In the choice of place and as to every thing else, the gentlemen I am sure will have the complaisance to consult the ladies, and will embrace this opportunity of displaying a spirit of accommodation and a desire to please. I shall avoid the least interference, and shall acquiesce in whatever the children shall agree upon among themselves. It is needless to say, that any instance of ill behaviour, and particularly a want of civility and good nature will exclude the person chargeable with it from this charming party. We will take this recreation once every fortnight.

\* They dined every Sunday with Madame d'Orleans, and on the other two days we went to see some manufactories or monuments.

ALL



30 October 1788.

ALL the children yesterday, with the exception of the Duke de Chartres and Mademoiselle, indulged themselves at dinner in loud laughs and other disagreeable manners which I have expressly forbidden. This is a species of disobedience, which, if repeated, I shall certainly punish.—Yesterday Mademoiselle said, *of her own accord*, an additional prayer distinct from those which she considers as daily incumbent on her: this is very commendable, piety being a pledge of every other virtue.

31 October 1788.

THE Duke de Chartres wrote me this morning a very enchanting letter. The following passage is literally copied from it: the original I shall all my life preserve as a treasure dear to my heart. ‘Till my education is finished, that is till the first of April 1791, I shall avoid every expensive pleasure, and devote the whole of my pocket-money to acts of beneficence. I entreat you to receive, in this respect, my most sacred word of honour. On the first of every month we will determine to what use the money shall be applied. I could wish the affair to rest with ourselves; but you are well assured that all my secrets are and ever will be yours, to do with them as you please.’

Since you leave it to my option, it is just that I should insert it in this journal, where I write without scruple all your faults. It is just that I should record so virtuous an example.

When

When you do ill, I blame you without reserve; when you do well, I am equally free in praising you: I tell you, on all occasions, the simple and exact truth. I think it my duty then to declare to the Duke de Chartres that his character has prodigiously improved within a year. He was born good, but he is enlightened and virtuous by acquisition. He has nothing of the frivolousness of his age; he cordially despises all the puerile vanities which so generally engross the attention of young people, as finery, jewels, trinkets of every kind, dress, and a desire of being the first to adopt a new fashion. He has no attachment to money, he is perfectly disinterested, he hates pride and is consequently of a noble disposition. In short, he possesses an excellent heart, a quality that is common to all of you, and which, with reflection, may be productive of every other virtue. The Duke de Montpensier is less exempt from frivolous and fantastic desires, he is less mild, less easy to manage, but then he is younger. He has a natural love and admiration of every thing that is honest, and justice and integrity are striking features in his character. He possesses considerable delicacy of sentiment and a very lively imagination. His chief defect is the not knowing how to moderate and direct his vanity; it frequently fixes upon trifles, the tendency of which is to contract the understanding. When he shall cure himself of this fault, he will readily acquire every quality in which he is deficient. He will no longer be irritable; he will cease to laugh at a thousand puerilities in which there is neither good nor harm; and he will be less attentive to the different articles of dress.

But

But I am speaking only of the past; and, as may be seen from this journal, since the institution of the prizes I have not the least fault to find with his character or his conduct.

---

*The same day.*

**M**ADEMOISELLE, of her own accord, performed this morning an act of piety and self-denial to which she was not at all obliged. I ought also to observe in general, that she is constantly noble and beneficent; that she is incapable of envy, jealousy, or ill will; that she has a perfect equality of temper, and the most compassionate and grateful heart. But she has a propensity to laugh and prattle\*; she is susceptible, and weeps with extreme facility. I am sure she will correct herself of these faults and absurdities, and since the institution of prizes I have seen in her nothing reprehensible in this respect.

. . . . .

---

1 November 1788.

**I** HAVE discovered that, for many months past, the Duke de Montpensier has taken care of a poor woman, and with a minute attention, a sensibility and secrecy that render the action charming. He wishes to pay her a visit, I shall accompany him.—I have forgotten to write in

\* These faults are common to all children naturally cheerful and communicative; but they are easily cured of them when their hearts are good and they are not deficient in understanding.

our journal, that a few days since we went to see another poor woman whom the humanity of the princes and of Mademoiselle had extricated from the most deplorable misery \*.

14 November 1788.

**M**ADEMOISELLE, of her own accord, studied alone upon the harp this morning an

\* It was said eighteen months ago, and has been a thousand times repeated in the journals inimical to the Revolution and in other libellous publications, that "I took my pupils to the houses of the poor and the workshops of the manufacturers merely to flatter and seduce the people, whom in my heart I despised." It is to shew the absurdity of this accusation that I cite so many instances of such visits of an early date, and at a time when it was impossible to foresee the revolution which has given so much importance to the esteem and regard of the people. The journal kept by M. Lebrun agrees perfectly with mine as to these facts and their dates; and beside none of these visits are passed over in silence by him, because as the expence attending them was paid by him (not choosing myself to have the trouble of it), he inserts regularly in his journal what was given on each of these occasions. For myself, I have only recorded such actions as were perfectly voluntary on the part of my pupils, and have avoided speaking even of those to which they were indirectly advised by me, not thinking them worthy of recital. I have not therefore mentioned the numerous visits which we made to a paralytic woman whom they supported for two years, nor numerous other visits to some poor persons recommended to us by M. de Saint Pierre (author of *Etudes de la Nature*), nor the visits to the different jails for the release of prisoners, nor a thousand other things of this kind which were suggested or recommended to them by me. I must add that, after the Revolution and before any libel had appeared against me, I had prohibited them the pleasure of bestowing their alms in person, clearly foreseeing that malice would not fail to put an odious construction on these charitable actions. At the period of the Revolution, we had nearly finished our course of manufactures, only four remaining to be seen; and from the month of October 1789, our excursions were merely to see monuments or country seats.

hour

hour longer than I had prescribed to her\*.— The Count de Beaujollois is charming in all respects: he is not amiable by halves, and I have never witnessed a stronger desire of pleasing. His attachment does not consist in professions only; there is nothing I am sure which he would not do to satisfy his governors, his friend, and that friend is not ungrateful.

.....  
 Mademoiselle and Pamela appear from the journals to be uniformly irreproachable as to humanity and good humour. Mademoiselle had three louis in her purse, and she *voluntarily* gave away two this morning in alms which were very well chosen. I ought also to observe that the two elder princes have, since the institution of prizes, been equally faultless as to humanity and good humour, and that upon this subject I have scarcely had occasion to say any thing even to the Count de Beaujollois.

.....  
 \* Mademoiselle d'Orleans received from me her first lesson on the harp 2d October 1785, and she has never had for this instrument any other master than myself. I feel the satisfaction of having given her a very superior talent, though she is not yet fourteen years of age. She may become a better musician, but in point of execution she has nothing to learn, which is astonishing when we consider her youth. When she was too young to study entirely alone, a valet who understood something of music heard her repeat the lessons I taught her, that she might observe the time; but this valet had no knowledge of the harp, and could not even tune this instrument. She now studies alone. I have never passed a day without giving her a lesson, and I have written on this journal regularly the words *a good* or *a bad lesson* accordingly as she executed it. I have suppressed these little details in this publication, as they were not calculated to interest the reader.

THE

26 November 1788.

**T**HE Duke de Montpensier was desirous, a few days since, of going himself to the house of the poor woman whom he had taken under his protection. The questions which he put to this woman, and the concern he shewed for her situation, gave him a most amiable appearance. . . . .

28 November 1788.

**F**ROM a motive of self-denial you refused yesterday to take tea, though you had my permission. It is by thus accustoming yourselves to these little sacrifices, that you will gradually succeed in obtaining over yourselves a complete empire. . . . .

2 December 1788.

**I** HAVE had occasion to reproach the Duke de Montpensier for having ignobly ridiculed a person of the Palais Royal. The Duke mimicked his mode of speaking, a pitiful sort of a jest which may well be retorted upon his highness, who has himself a defect of pronunciation that is very disagreeable. It is ignominious and cruel to laugh at natural imperfections. All derision is blameable; but this in particular shews an extreme narrowness of mind. . . . .

I HAVE



5 December 1788.

I HAVE sacrificed to-day a reading to which I was invited, at the house of Madame Necker, and which I had a great desire to hear, in order to accompany you, in very bad weather, to some manufactories. You never thought of proposing to me to sacrifice your pleasure to mine, to which however I should not have consented ; but it was a simple duty which you ought to have observed.

. . . . .

---

25 December 1788.

THE Duke de Montpensier has been indisposed for some days, which has interrupted our readings. He has behaved with perfect propriety in his apartment, and has applied himself to his studies when he has been free from fever. . . . .

. . . . .

---

14 January 1789.

THE Duke de Montpensier has evinced an excellent heart by his conduct to Nadir, his negro servant, who had contracted debts. His Highness, from a *voluntary* impulse, gave him all the money which he had in his purse.—The Duke de Chartres has relapsed into his old habit of walking double, and practises all his other antics, such as playing with every thing that he lays his hands on. . . . .

. . . . .

*Account*

27 January 1789.

*Account of the Children at Belle Chasse, since the Institution of Prizes.\**

THE princes rise at six o'clock, and do not arrive here till noon. But I give them their plan of morning studies, and M. Lebrun writes in his Journal a minute account of their proceedings during these intervals, which is brought me regularly. All the hours from their arrival at Belle Chasse till nine in the evening they pass with me, except the time appropriated to the academy: a journal however is kept by Mademoiselle de Rime, in which the masters give an account of their drawing, and other lessons which pass under my inspection. Beside all this, there is the Journal now before me, in which I write every thing that I conceive to be worthy of observation, whether it be matter of praise or blame. Thus I have a written and particular account of every thing the princes do from the instant of their rising to the moment of their going to bed; and can judge of their conduct from the most undeniable evidence, the evidence of facts. It would be tiresome to read over again all the journals that record these facts since the institution of prizes; I have therefore made a little summary of them, and from this summary my judgment will be formed.

\* In this account I included two young ladies, whom I educated with Mademoiselle, and who have the happiness to be her companions and friends. I included also my nephew, at that time an infant, and who had no studies in common with my other pupils, but dancing and drawing. I shall insert in this place nothing but what relates to the children of M. d'Orleans.

*Conduct*

*Conduct of the Duke de Chartres, since the Institution of Prizes, 24 October.*

A CONSTANT application to drawing; and of consequence the Duke has made an astonishing progress in this art. As to his other studies, I have little to blame or commend, history and geography excepted, in which his proficiency has been considerable. In his readings with me he has been pleased and interested, and has reaped from them no trifling benefit. In point of good humour he has been irreproachable; I would say the same of his humanity, if his Highness had not been frequently deficient in the attentions of society and friendship, duties which are not to be dispensed with; but he has been conscious of his fault, has expressed his sorrow, and has endeavoured to repair it. Beside I cannot sufficiently praise his candour and sincerity; and, since I am obliged to give an account of every thing, I must add that he has been uniformly charitable and generous; that he has displayed no unbecoming fondness for dress, nothing frivolous, nothing effeminate, and that his pure and elevated soul has been incapable of a single instance of envy or of jealousy. With respect to politeness he is greatly improved; he speaks better in public company, and in private society he is more attentive, and seems to have lost that spirit of gossiping for which he was formerly reprehensible. I give him the first prize of humanity and good humour, observing at the same time that, as to good humour, he is perfectly intitled to it, and I shew him no indulgence; but that, as to humanity, it were  
to

to be wished that he had been a little more mindful of his friends, and anxious for their welfare.

Respecting their drawings the princes agreed to submit them to the examination of M. David and M. Geroult, without affixing their names to the performances, that the judgment might be wholly impartial. The second prize of drawing has been given to the Duke de Chartres. These prizes were only contended for by the two eldest princes and my nephew, whose strength was nearly equal; the other persons being too much inferior to them to engage in the competition.

The prize of assiduity has in general been unmerited, though I cannot charge any of my pupils, the Count de Beaujollois excepted, with absolute indolence; but to merit this prize in particular there must be an ardour and perseverance which I have not observed. With respect also to the prize of self-denial, though there has been no appearance of the contrary vice, the Duke de Chartres has done nothing that should give him any claim to a recompense.

---

*The Duke de Montpensier.*

A PERFECT application in drawing and an astonishing progress. His application in his other studies was also without intermission for the space of three months and a half, till the end of December, but since that period he has considerably relaxed, his drawing excepted. His Highness has performed many acts of humanity

manity and charity that are truly laudable ; his good humour in his intercourse with me has been perfect, and in his behaviour to others he has been for the last three months more commendable in this respect than heretofore, but he is not yet what I could wish. He is sometimes very imperious to his servants, and he has still a propensity to detraction, to satire and contempt. Twice within these three months has he made uncivil replies to M. Lebrun, which is totally inexcusable, as the princes owe him both gratitude and friendship for his judicious and persevering cares, as well as a profound esteem for his character and the example he has afforded them of every virtue. I must further observe that, towards those with whom his acquaintance is slight, the Duke is neither sufficiently obliging, nor sufficiently polite : but in general he is interested for the persons whom he loves, and absence does not make him either forget or neglect them.—The first prize of humanity and good humour which I give to his Highness, is not therefore completely merited : but I hope that I shall next year have no need to shew him any indulgence in this respect.—The prize of assiduity is deferred.—As to self-denial, the Duke de Montpensier has merited neither censure nor recompense.

---

*Mademoiselle.*

**N**OT enough application to the harp, though her improvement is obvious : not enough as to her other studies, dancing and writing

writing excepted. Not enough politeness, but great humanity and good humour. Striking instances of self-denial, the particulars of which are recorded in the journals. I give therefore to Mademoiselle *without indulgence*, as rewards perfectly merited, the first prize of humanity and good humour, and the prize of self-denial. —Mademoiselle is becoming dexterous, and begins to exert herself successfully.

---

*The Count de Beaujollois.*

**H**IS highness has an excellent heart; I hope therefore that he will next year merit some prize; unfortunately as to the present year, it is impossible to give him one.

---

*Recapitulation.*

**B**EFORE I conclude this exact and faithful account, I would make a recapitulation, which is very satisfactory to myself. From the summary of the journals, I perceive that the year, which has just closed, has been the most productive of any since the education of the princes commenced. All the children, with the exception of one only who may still be considered as an infant, have prodigiously improved both as to character and understanding. They have one inestimable virtue which is common to them all: that of candour, sincerity, a horror of falsehood, a detestation of every dishonest proceeding. I may say without exaggeration, that this quality cannot possibly exist in greater perfection. Another



Another virtue common to them all is a lively sense of justice; they are equally incapable of envy, and their emulation never degenerates into jealousy. The Duke de Montpensier has one peculiar excellence, the being naturally mindful of the persons whom he loves, whether they are present or at a distance. He joins to this a discretion and a delicacy of feeling that are uncommon at his age. He has acquired this year an important virtue which his brother always possessed, that of listening to salutary admonition and useful truths: he is at length persuaded that the strongest proof of attachment consists in telling those we love of their faults and imperfections without disguise.

—Mademoiselle, who was also very irritable, is no longer so, and can now bear the language of truth, which she knows to be that of friendship. Mademoiselle has beside less propensity to gossip; her mind is formed, she has a charming equality of temper, and as to her heart it will ever I hope remain what it is at present. All that I have to wish for in her is a little more application to serious studies, a greater taste for reading, more politeness, and a general desire to please.—Lastly, the Count de Beaujolais, the only person of whom I have to complain, possesses at the same time the seeds of many excellent qualities: he has made some proficiency in writing; a still greater in orthography, in which he has been instructed by me; and he has learned the first elements of various sciences.—Thus I have, in general, reason to be satisfied, and I am extremely satisfied. This pleasure I owe, and it is the dearer to me on that account, to the excellent natural dis-

position of my pupils, to the strong desire they feel of meriting the affection of Monseigneur and Madame, and of being able one day to imitate the bright example of their virtues. I am also indebted for this satisfaction to the cares and inestimable zeal of M. Lebrun, M. Myris, M. Couppey, M. Alyon, and all the masters whom I cannot sufficiently praise for their punctuality and judicious conformity to my views. In the department of Mademoiselle I have equal reason to be satisfied with Mademoiselle Rime and M. Glassen; and had not the exertions of M. Lebrun and myself been thus happily seconded by the persons I have mentioned, and others equally deserving of notice, Messrs. Meeke, Muynozzi the painter, Galand, Doffin riding-master, Biauzat, Donadieu, and in short every one concerned in the education of the children, we should not now enjoy as we do the felicity of seeing our labours repaid by so rich and unexpected an harvest.

---

1 May 1789.

**I** HAVE given to the children as an exercise for next week, a subject of composition as follows: What are the qualifications and accomplishments that are best calculated to secure to a young man or a young woman, at their entrance into the world, general kindness and uninterrupted success?

The question consists of two parts, the male pupils shall therefore answer it as it relates to a man, and the female as it relates to a woman. I shall require a theme of this nature every Saturday, written upon pieces of paper all of the

the same form, and with a margin of my observations. I shall bestow a prize upon two of these compositions, and shall enter my decision in this journal. The subjects I shall give will form a series, and will constitute a system of morality in the manner of a very pretty romance; reviewing one after another the duties of human life in all possible conditions; and when the romance shall be finished, the different sections shall be bound together \*.

---

2 May 1789.

I READ aloud this evening the compositions of my children, and I confess that they all astonished me and greatly surpassed my expectations. I gave the prize to the theme of the Duke de Montpensier, a decision that was applauded with transport by all his generous rivals, who had foreseen this event when they compared among themselves their respective performances. I gave the second prize to \* \* \* \*, which was equally approved. Of the three other compositions, the best was that of \* \* \*. There was considerable discretion and good sense in that of the Duke de Chartres, who, to write well, wants only a more cultivated taste and a better choice of words. Cæsar's theme is commendable for reflection and the excellence of its principles. The reading being finished, I made some little verbal criticisms, and my children will to-morrow morning make their alterations accordingly. I have only marked such words as I disliked, leaving it to themselves to substitute others, that the compositions might

\* I speak here only of the compositions of the two elder princes.

be entirely their own ; a plan which I shall always observe.

---

*Subject of Composition for the Princes.*

**W**E will suppose our hero to be a prince of the blood royal. He sets out upon his travels and arrives at Spa. He takes with him a young man to whom he is partial, but with whom he is desirous of being better acquainted before he makes him his friend. What means does he employ to obtain this knowledge? How does he study the character of this young man? What qualities finally determine his choice? What other persons does the prince take with him? How must he conduct himself so as to reap advantage from his travels, and make himself beloved?—The day after his arrival at Spa he takes a solitary walk upon one of the mountains. Description of the rocks from a majestic view at the moment of the sun's rising. He perceives two women, sitting upon a rock, one of whom is young and charming, and is reading aloud some Italian poetry. What is the subject of it? Quote some lines. Portrait of this young woman.

. . . . .

---

9 May 1789.

**T**HE children gave me yesterday their compositions. I have bestowed the prize on that of the Duke de Montpensier. The next best is that of \* \* \* \*, which is full of simplicity and nature. There are some very pretty things

in

in the composition of \* \* \*, but it has too many details bordering upon unmeaning prattle. I have already described in what manner a minute detail may be rendered interesting. It must either offer a lively impression of the scene, or convey some moral instruction, or serve to unfold the characters; it must be drawn with elegance and with a strong resemblance of truth: if it have not these qualifications, it is in the highest degree puerile and insipid. The theme of the Duke de Chartres would be very well, but for the disparity of its style. I explained what I meant by disparity of style. The children were attentive to my remarks.

---

*Subject of Composition for the Princes.*

OUR hero, on his return from the mountains, relates his little adventure to his friend, expressing at the same time a wish that the affections of this young woman might be disengaged, and her rank suitable to his own. He understands that she is an Italian princess, and unmarried. He then makes enquiries respecting her character and education, and he finds her to be a lady of distinguished virtue and talents. He sees her frequently at Vauxhall, and dances with her. He gives an entertainment to which she is invited. Description of this entertainment. Our hero in love. How does he act in this situation? He is but twenty years of age, and has a father and mother at Paris for whom he feels the utmost esteem and tenderness. . . . .

*Subject of Composition for the Princes.*

A COURIER arrives to the prince with the answer of his father, who approves his choice. The prince declares his passion to the mother of the young lady, who treats him with politeness and esteem, but informs him that her daughter is promised to a German prince. What is the conduct of our hero upon this intelligence?

---

*Saint Leu, 2 June 1789.*

I READ yesterday the compositions: I gave the first prize to \* \* \*, the second to the Duke de Chartres.

*Subject of Composition for the Princes.*

OUR hero arrives at Brunswick. As soon as the Duke hears of it, he visits him and invites him to take up his abode in the palace, which the prince politely refuses. He goes to court. The Duke of Brunswick conceives a partiality for him. The prince studies him with care, and desires his friend to procure all the information he can respecting his character and conduct. Portrait of the Duke: it should have defects and some brilliant qualities. Short account of what is curious in the town of Brunswick and its environs.

M. LEBRUN complains in his Journal that the Duke de Montpensier, having reserved an orange



orange from the preceding evening's entertainment, ate it this morning without asking his brother to partake of it. I observe very different sentiments between Mademoiselle and \*\*\*; they never eat the smallest thing without offering to share it, and they are not sisters. At present it is only in your power to shew kindness to each other on trifling occasions; but if you are deficient in little things now, you will never be distinguished for great or good ones hereafter: you will become selfish, and it is the nature of selfishness to degrade the mind and to contract and harden the heart.

---

*Continuation of the Romance for the Princes.*

THE Duke of Brunswick confides to the prince that he had been passionately fond of a young widow of his court, and that, at the moment he was about to marry her, his favourite had discovered that she was only attached to him from ambition and was in love with another; that, without coming to an explanation, he immediately broke off the connection, and offered his hand to an Italian princess: the Duke adds that he is unhappy because he is not yet entirely cured of his passion. The fair widow retires from court and travels in Germany.

---

*Saint Leu, 12 July 1789.*

THE tenth of the present month was my birth-day; the children deferred the celebration for two days to have the company of the

Duke d'Orleans and M. de Sillery. At noon I received a letter from the Duke informing me of the departure of M. Necker, and that he should not be able to come. Many persons have arrived and have occasioned us the greatest inquietude respecting this event. I was tempted to put a stop to the entertainment; but as no disturbance had yet taken place, I conceived that it might perhaps be ascribed to consternation and grief at this minister's dismissal, and be construed into a censure of the proceedings of the court: I therefore only requested the children to make it less festive.

---

15 July 1789.

**A**T three o'clock this day M. de la Buffière arrived on the part of the Duchess d'Orleans to inform me that she was apprehensive for the safety of her children, and that it was her desire, as well as that of every body else at Rincy, that I would take them to Paris, where they would be in less danger than at Saint Leu: that in every thing else I might act as I thought proper. I returned for answer that I had heard from the Duke, who requested me to conduct the children wherever I pleased except to Paris.

At seven o'clock a messenger arrived with the news that the King was reconciled with the people, and was going to dismiss his troops. God grant it may be true! With lenity, and confidence in his subjects he will gain all hearts in his favour. May divine wisdom guide him, and may he be deaf to every counsel that would lead him in a contrary path. I am a citizen,  
born

born under a monarchical government; I hate despotism, I love my country; I respect also and love my king; and I ardently pray for a cordial and lasting reconciliation.

. . . . .

19 July 1789.

. . . . . NOW that a calm is effected, I will speak to you of your conduct during these great events. It was frequently below your age, particularly with the education you have received. Your attention has been occupied by a thousand trifles and your conversations full of frivolity and gossiping. I will tell you how you ought to have behaved. You ought to have questioned me incessantly respecting the Duke your father, and to have been perpetually writing to the Duchess your mother. You ought to have requested me to direct you to be waked, if I happened to receive any intelligence in the night, and to have been deeply anxious for your father and your mother and for the success of the friends of liberty. You ought to have been unable to have passed the time of your recreations otherwise than in talking to one another, or to me, respecting these great affairs, or in writing to the Duchess d'Orleans. You ought to have been alive to the situation of M. de \* \* \* at a moment that deprived him of his situation, and to have conjectured whether, if he were in a foreign country, he might not be in want of money. When Lardenois \* came to request my assistance, I

\* Serjeant in the guards who taught them their exercise, and who at this time lost his situation. M. de Chartres afterwards obtained from M. de Leoncourt a provision for him.

gave him a draft for a hundred louis; you ought to have desired me to do so. If your conduct had been such as I have described, I should not have passed a moment apart from you; I should have sat up with you anxious for the event; you would have been my consolation and my delight. I flatter myself that after all I have done for enlightening your minds, your eyes will at length be opened, and you will shake off this stupid and disgraceful apathy: it is high time. How extreme a contempt will men entertain for you, the sons of such a father and the most virtuous of mothers, if they do not find you adoring them, and if you employ so little thought concerning your friends and the public! There is no mode remaining in which you can justify yourselves in my eyes, except that of discarding at once the puerile weakness that occupies you, and discharging your duties hereafter with the most fervent emulation. The present is no time for words; we must have action, constant, unremitted action.

20 July 1789.

**I** READ to the two princes the preceding article. It reduced them to a situation truly pitiable. I have never witnessed any thing so energetic and violent as their despair, and I am sure that this lesson will produce the most instantaneous and happy revolution in their minds\*; because their sentiments and their

\* I was not mistaken, it closed for ever the period of infancy. Those who have not been accustomed to the education of children can scarcely conceive the wonderful effects which may be wrought upon a young imagination and an unadulterated heart by a single lesson happily timed and forcibly delivered.

hearts

hearts are excellent, and all they want is a habit of reflection. Some excuse may be made for them; their studies are so serious and so multiplied that, when the hours of walking arrive, they have in general so much need of relaxation that they think only of play. But they should accustom themselves to find this relaxation in rational and interesting conversation, in just and useful reflections, to which a walk is by no means unfavourable and which is expected from persons of fourteen and fifteen years of age. I conjure them then to part for ever with their unmeaning prattle and trifling conversation, and to habituate themselves from this moment to talk of subjects that are important, instructive, or interesting.

.....

23 July 1789.

YESTERDAY I read the compositions of the princes; that of the Duke de Chartres was good for nothing; the Duke de Montpensier's was very charming.

.....

27 July 1789.

*Continuation of the Romance.*

THE Duke of Brunswick consults his friend the prince, respecting the better government of his people. The prince writes his reflections in answer to the following questions of the duke: What authority ought a prince to desire? In what does the liberty consist to which every citizen is intitled? What are the best means,

means for reforming the public manners? What ought to be the sentiments of a prince relative to war? In what manner ought he protect literature and the arts?

---

2 August 1789.

.....

THE Duke de Chartres permitted himself to say at table, before the servants, that a quantity of corn had been discovered in the house of M\*\*\*. We ought never to repeat a dishonourable accusation which has not been publicly proved, and in the present state of things such conversation is singularly reprehensible.

.....

Paris, 12 August 1789.

THE very evening of our departure from Saint Leu, you conducted yourselves with great propriety in a critical situation. As you rode through a village, four leagues from Saint Leu, the peasants who were assembled, no sooner caught sight of the blue ribbon of the Duke de Chartres, than they vented themselves in hootings and curses against you. You galloped on not a little surprised at their unaccountable violence. In a moment however you saw them pursuing you with clubs, axes and other weapons. All this did not stop you, and you would soon have been out of their reach had you not heard them exclaim: 'Scoundrels, do not think to escape us; you shall presently be caught.' As they uttered the word 'caught' you both stopped, saying that, since they accused you of dastardliness, you were determined



mined not to proceed. You sent one of your attendants to meet the multitude, who asked them why they should desire to assassinate the Duke de Chartres? At this name they appeared much surprised, said they had taken you for somebody else, overwhelmed you with their blessings, and you pursued your route without interruption.

The day of your departure from Saint Leu the Duke de Chartres climbed a very high tree: at the top he was suspended by one hand only to a branch of the tree which was too weak to support him and which therefore broke. The Duke de Chartres, though he lost his equilibrium, did not lose his presence of mind, but let himself down in such a manner as not to be dangerously wounded. He came off with no other hurt than two large excoriations in the thigh of some depth, but at which he did not utter the least complaint. I was witness to this accident, and was perfectly satisfied with the conduct of his highness on the occasion.

. . . . .

---

21 August 1789.

. . . . .

I INFORMED you yesterday that I should in future, at our theatrical readings, avoid myself all remarks on the beauties or defects of the poet, and should expect you to stop me and make your own observations, assigning at the same time the reasons on which your approbation or disapprobation is founded. I began yesterday; you were very attentive, and all your remarks were ingenious and proper, which

which convinces me that you only want application and thought to be perfectly what I wish you to be. You have no time to lose, and if you are negligent of these things, you will acquire a habit of indolence and apathy which will defeat all that nature and education have done for you.

The Duchess d'Orleans has been absent for a fortnight. The Duke de Montpensier has written to her; but the Duke de Chartres has not, which is inexcusable\*.

. . . . .

22 August 1789.

*To the Duke de Montpensier.*

• **O**ROSMAN says in the play:

I ask an ardent love, all else I reckon hate †.

This is the language of a heart extremely sensible. It was from a similar feeling that I yesterday employed an expression at which you were hurt. It was doubtless exaggerated, but proofs of your coldness I ought ever to call by this name\*. You have written, I should have been better pleased had you spoken to me upon the subject. How will you be able to converse about affairs of importance, if you cannot speak of a private concern to a friend?

. . . . .

23 August 1789.

**T**HE Duke de Montpensier has naturally a stern and forbidding aspect and an unpleasant

\* It may be some apology that we expected her every day.

† Je me croirois haï d'être aimé foiblement.

‡ I had complained of his *indifference* to me.

manner

manner of contracting his brows, but it has within a short time considerably increased. At his age it would require little effort to correct himself of this defect, which is less trifling than it may appear, for what misfortune can be greater, particularly in a prince, than to have a face in which we constantly read dissatisfaction and ill humour, instead of a serene and benevolent countenance? His Highness has also made no attempts to correct himself of a very disagreeable fault of pronunciation. No blame can be ascribed to me; I have pointed out the surest means of conquering this defect, but he has not deigned to bestow upon them the slightest attention. It is astonishing that, disposed as he is to laugh at the most trivial imperfections in others, he should be so little anxious to correct his own. I have the same fault to find with his dancing: he would dance very well if his arms were not ridiculously glued to his body, and if he had not an air of dulness and unconcern so discordant with this exercise. For some time past I have assisted myself in your dances, and have beside accompanied you on my harp \*, and yet I cannot obtain from you the complaisance of attending to these little things.

\* They had requested me to learn the tunes of some country dances on my harp for this purpose. I had no time to myself but from six o'clock in the evening till two or three in the morning; and these hours were devoted to writing. When they made this request I was busily employed upon a work that I was desirous of finishing. This work I laid aside, to learn by heart about an hundred country dances; which, as may be supposed, was a very wearisome task. But I have ever thought that serious lessons, important cares and severity could only be useful in the education of children, by being mixed with the utmost indulgence and complaisance, whenever it can be done without injury to them.

THE

27 August 1789.

THE Duke de Chartres related to me, with some degree of humour, an anecdote which proves him to be capable of reflection. A person observed before him, that it was very flattering to the age of M. de Clermont Tonnerre to be president of the National Assembly. 'True,' replied another, 'it is a charming place; the president can give tickets of admission to the house.' As the Duke de Chartres justly observed, he must be a very *incorrigible courtier* who, in the present state of things, can see no other advantage in this office\*.

I ought to mention that in his law studies† the application of the Duke de Chartres is invariable, and that M. Biauza‡ is astonished at his good sense and penetration. The Duke displays in general a solidity of understanding that is admirably fitted for the conduct of affairs.

The princes gave me to-day their themes, which they have been upwards of a month in composing. They are very well done. I have bestowed the prize on that of the Duke de Char-

\* I cite this anecdote that I might have an opportunity of saying that it is the only instance of political animadversion contained in this journal. I never spoke to my pupils of the king and the royal family, either before or since the revolution, but in terms calculated to strengthen their respect and attachment; sentiments from which no true patriot especially can ever depart, as the oath which he has solemnly taken makes this attachment a sacred duty.

† I made them continue this course of law, that they might be the better able to feel, from a comparison, the advantages of the new constitution.

‡ Nephew of the deputy of that name in the National Assembly.

tres,

tres, which is longer and has more thought in it than any of his preceding ones. I am very much pleased with the composition, but the writing is a most wretched scrawl.

---

*Continuation of the Moral Romance.*

THE young prince departs from Brunswick for Vienna. Description of the country through which he travels, and of Vienna. Some traits of beneficence in his route.

---

*Passy, Wednesday, 2 September 1789.*

WE arrived here yesterday. My motive in coming is that we may be near enough to attend regularly the interesting debates of the National Assembly. M. Biauzaat is with us, and you will proceed in your course of law studies. On your return from the Assembly, you are to write an account of what you have heard, which you will shew to M. Biauzaat and to me. We went to the Assembly for the second time to-day. The question of debate was that of the royal sanction; there were few voices in favour of the *veto* being absolute; the general opinion was that it ought to be merely a power of suspending the law. You will remember that one of the reasons alleged against the absolute *veto* was, that kings in general are badly educated, that they are surrounded by parasites, that they are fond of these parasites, and that their minds are of consequence less enlightened than those of other men. You were very attentive during this sitting. We had

had a great deal of conversation both yesterday and to-day, and in these conversations I was highly pleased with the intelligence and penetration of my children. I could have wished that the Duke de Chartres had been more polite this morning to the lady who sat next him, and that he had not obliged me to tell him in a whisper, not to place himself before her without having first offered her the seat.

. . . . .

Friday, 4 September 1789.

**Y**OUR studies irreproachable. You have shewed me your abstracts of the sitting of Wednesday. That of the Duke de Chartres is very minute and excellent. He has added to it some reflections, with which M. Biauizat and myself are perfectly enchanted. He has also written to M. Pieyre \* a charming letter upon the present state of public affairs. His mind takes a turn that is extremely rational and solid.

. . . . .

Tuesday, 8 September 1789.

**I** DID not sup with you yesterday evening; but, being in my chamber while you were at table, and my door open, I heard very distinctly the Duke de Montpensier, with a loud voice and a ridiculous accent, attempt to mimick M. \*\*\*\*\*; I say attempt, for strong as his desire is to be a buffoon, he has not the least

\* Author of an excellent piece, entitled *The School for Fathers* (*L' Ecole des Pères*).



talent for the character; a talent which is odious and contemptible even when it succeeds in raising a laugh; but his Highness has merely the pretension to it, and nothing can be more abortive than his mimicry. It is incredible after what I have said to you upon this subject, and no longer ago than yesterday, that you should persist in this scandalous practice, so unworthy of a man of sense, and particularly of a prince. Had I been at table, would you have allowed yourself in this stupidity? Certainly not, and it is therefore the more reprehensible. Is it possible at your age not to feel that to make a jest of any person's figure, tone of voice, defective pronunciation, and such other things as do not depend upon himself, is extremely weak and puerile. I will add that \*\*\*\*\* has nothing ridiculous or singular in his voice. In fine, you disobeyed me yesterday by doing a thing which is in its own nature mean and vulgar. You also bawled and hollowed extremely, which I expressly forbade; and which you ought to avoid, particularly when a sick and aged person like my mother sleeps near the eating-room, and is likely to be awaked. I have informed you before that I cannot now suffer myself to overlook those faults which imply an ill disposition; since therefore you have acted like a child, ill-taught and of no discretion, I shall treat you like a child. You shall dine and sup to-day in your chamber, and the next time I go to the theatre I shall not take you in the party. You must not imagine that any part of this punishment can be remitted. I advise you therefore to submit to it with propriety and decency, or I shall be obliged to make it double. . . .

STILL

*Belle Chasse, 12 October 1789.*

**S**TILL more commendable as to your studies. For some time past we have conversed more frequently, and for a longer continuance; and in these conversations you always please me.—I have forgotten to write that the princes have been many times to the National Assembly without me.—The Duke de Chartres gave me his last subject of composition about a fortnight ago; I was perfectly satisfied with it. I only received the Duke de Montpensier's this morning, and have not yet read it.

. . . . .

*26 October 1789.*

. . . . . **MADemoiselle** improves charmingly upon the harp. For the last twelve months I have given her an additional lesson of an hour and a half every day, so that she now receives two lessons a day. I have also, for six months past, played to the children three or four times a week, while they danced, taking care to select a great variety of airs composed for that purpose. I invent pantomimes for them, and I this summer had Mademoiselle taught to play on the tambour de basque and on the castanets, and to exercise herself in various tricks of dexterity, as well as in her sleight of hand, which she does not forget.

. . . . .

*1 November 1789.*

**T**HE Duke d'Orleans left us five days ago. I was obliged to remind the Duke de Chartres of

of writing to him; the Duke de Montpensier  
still neglects this duty. . . . .

---

2 December 1789.

THE Duke de Chartres frequently writes to me in the most affectionate style. He has requested it as a favour that I would permit him to call me *his mother*: my heart has not been insensible to the request; and as, in my cares and tenderness, I regard you all as my very dear children, I have permitted him to give me this appellation. But in his last letter he calls me his *true mother*. I am very sure that he has not reflected upon the meaning of this expression; and this is all I need say to prevent his repeating it. I am only *his second mother*, and I should place no faith in any of his sentiments respecting me, if he did not feel for the tender and virtuous mother that nature has given him, the superior attachment which she merits. She only wants to have been educated in the manner you have been, to do for her children all that I have done for you.

---

*Chaussée d'Antin, 9 January 1790.*

THE three princes took this day the civic oath in their district. The president addressed them in a speech, to which the Duke de Chartres replied without preparation, and in a very proper manner. When the register was presented to him to sign his name, he desired every honorary appellation to be erased, adding that  
the

the title of *citizen* was sufficient. I approve of what you have done, if when you did it you made such reflections as these: That to be a good citizen it is necessary to have all public and private virtues; that it is impossible truly to love one's nation or one's countrymen while we exhibit the example of scandalous and degenerate manners; while we neglect the duties of religion; while we live in discord with our father, our mother, our brothers, our wife, or our children; while our conduct does not display our veneration for public manners; while we allow ourselves in indecency; while we neglect the unfortunate; while we suffer our beneficence to be accompanied with ostentation; in fine while we are inconsistent, vain or vicious. Whoever has these faults is a bad citizen, and all his pompous declamation for the people, for his country and for liberty, only prove his stupidity and folly. A good citizen is necessarily prudent, modest, charitable and humane. I trust these reflections have passed through your mind in the present instance, and in that case you were much in the right in desiring no other appellation than that of a citizen, and in considering it as an abstract of all that is estimable and good.

. . . . .

10 March 1790.

THE Duke de Chartres confessed to me this morning a circumstance which greatly surprised me. It was that an article of his had appeared in the paper of M\*\*\*\* which he had secretly written

agai  
racion  
cont  
semb

written and sent by the penny post \*. To write in secret without consulting me, to take a step of this nature without my knowledge! . . . But you have expressed the most lively regret, and have repaid the fault as far as was in your power, by coming of your own accord to tell me of it a few days after, without my asking you any questions, which could not indeed have happened, as I had not the smallest suspicion of the circumstance. You were governed you say by a momentary impulse, of which you quickly repented: this does not exculpate you, and you were notwithstanding guilty of a very considerable fault. I ought to add that, as your character is mild, reasonable and moderate, which renders you less giddy than is common at your age, the fault, I trust, will never be repeated. . . . .

---

12 March 1790.

THE Duke de Chartres has given me this morning a new cause of grief by informing me that, upon being asked by the Duchess d'Orleans if the article in question were written by him, he had denied it. I expressed to his Highness my astonishment and mortification at this crime, which is the most atrocious and unpardonable of all. He felt the force of what I said to him, and replied that, as the Duchess d'Orleans had for some time past ap-

\* It was an article in which he expressed his indignation against an anonymous writer who had called the people a *ferocious beast*, and had spoken beside in terms of the utmost contempt of the new constitution, and of the National Assembly.

peared

peared to blame him for actions of which the Duke his father had expressed his approbation by letter, he had every reason to dread her displeasure on so culpable an occasion. He mentioned that when he informed the Duchess of the particulars of what had passed upon his taking the civic oath, the account seemed to give her pain. I answered that upon this, as well as upon every other occasion, I had consulted the Duchess d'Orleans, and had followed her orders. . . . .

I then told your Highness that with a mother the most indulgent and virtuous, the shocking offence you had committed was doubly inexcusable; that you ought instantly to repair it by an avowal of the truth, and by imploring her pardon; that it would be natural and just were she to treat you with the greatest severity, and that such was the conduct you ought to expect from her. You see in this instance where a false step may lead, and how the commission of one fault involves us in a thousand others. I will add, that the falsehood to your mother was as stupid as it was dishonest: you knew that I wrote an account of every thing in this journal without indulgence or disguise, for the information of the Duke and Duchess d'Orleans whenever they should choose to consult it; and that she might therefore have detected you, had she been desirous, by reading the history of the 10th instant, the day that I first knew it \*. . . . .

IT

\* M. de Chartres in reality well knew that Madame d'Orleans might have been equally informed with myself of all the particulars of his conduct and character, by reading this journal; but he knew at the same time that she never read it. This indifference has always astonished me. It existed even  
at



IT is with pleasure I do justice in this place to the goodness of Mademoiselle. She avoids every little expensive pleasure, and, to support an interesting family, she has parted with a number of handsome trinkets given her on such occasions as new years days. The request that she might be permitted to make these sacrifices was perfectly voluntary. I readily consented, and she interests herself in the welfare of this family with a minute attention and perseverance that sensibly touch my heart. Continue, dear child, ever to act thus; it is repaying me for my tender cares; it is imitating a mother of whom I have related to you so many similar instances of humanity; it is laying up in store for yourself an inexhaustible source of happiness, which is only to be found in religion, goodness, charity and the discharge of every duty.

---

13 March 1790.

THE Duke de Chartres has made the avowal which became him to the Duchesse d'Orleans, and he informs me that he was received by her with the utmost affection and goodness. You have a just sense of this indulgence which merits all your gratitude; and I am sure that dur-

at the time when she condescended to honour me with the most tender friendship: but during this period I believe she scarcely looked into the journal more than four or five times, and after withdrawing from me her confidence, she never read a line of it. In the mean time it would have made a still stronger impression on my pupils, had she imposed it on herself as an inviolable law at least to read it regularly when she came to see us, and she would in that case have known at present the dispositions and character of her children as perfectly as the person who has educated them.

ing your whole life you will never be chargeable with a similar crime.

§ . . . . .

14 March 1790.

**I** HAVE neglected to record a circumstance honourable to the character of the Duke de Chartres. He has received at the beginning of this year for the first time in his life a considerable sum of money, viz. the pension of a thousand crowns which the civil list annexes to the cordon bleu, and which I desired might be paid into his hands, with liberty to do with it whatever he pleased. On the very instant of his receiving this money, from a voluntary impulse of generosity, reserving only fifty louis for himself, he gave fifty to his brother, twelve and an half to Mademoiselle, and an equal sum to the count de Beaujollois. I know beside that the Duke de Chartres made a very virtuous use of the money which he appropriated to himself, and have been told that the Duke de Montpensier performed various acts of charity. I was myself a witness of Mademoiselle and the Count de Beaujollois having expended theirs in a very few days in presents and alms.

15 March 1790.

**I** THIS day, in the presence of her daughter, of Mademoiselle Rime and of Sophia, requested the Duchesse d'Orleans to do me the favour to read this journal, at the same time observing that the Duke, when he came hither, frequently read in it; that it had always been  
some

some mortification to me that the Duchefs had never asked to see it; that for the laſt eighteen months ſhe had never read ſo much as a ſingle word in it, though ſhe well knew that the principal motive that had determined me to undertake it was, to enable me to render a minute and accurate account relative to the children with whoſe education ſhe had intruſted me; and that ſhe might have an infallible criterion by which to judge of the principles with which I inſpired them, as well as of their progreſs and character, ſince, as her intercourse with them was comparatively little, ſhe would otherwiſe have no information upon the ſubject. The Duchefs replied to my entreaties in the following words: “ The journal was nothing to her, and ſhe was determined to place entire confidence in her children.” I repeated my inſtances, but to no purpoſe: the Duchefs returned twice over preciſely the ſame answer. I then replied in my turn that I ſhould be obliged to minute this converſation in the journal, which I accordingly do as what I owe to my own juſtification.

---

31 March 1790.

.....  
 .....  
 I RECORD with the utmoſt pleaſure a charming thing of the Duke de Chartres. On the day that the National Aſſembly aboliſhed the right of eldership, the Duke, the moment he was informed of the meaſure, exclaimed, embracing at the ſame time his brother: “ Oh how I am delighted! But had the Aſſembly not done ſo, all would have been equal between

"us; my brother has long known this." It was spoken with all the grace and nature that an excellent heart inspires on such occasions, and which cannot be preserved in a recital. . . .

Such sentiments are rare and transporting, but they do not at all astonish me in the Duke de Chartres, whose disposition is naturally generous and noble, who has a strong aversion to pride, an extreme tenderness for his sister, and who imagines that the happiest use to which money can be applied is to make it instrumental to acts of this nature. He is right; no happiness can be greater than that of doing good to others: it is also the surest way to distinction, and independently of a virtuous heart, vanity alone, if it understood its own interest, would adopt this manner of thinking and of acting. —These sentiments, I thank Heaven, are not peculiar to the Duke de Chartres; they glow equally in the breast of the Duke de Montpensier, of the Count de Beaujollois and of Mademoiselle, and nothing can afford me so pure a satisfaction. . . .

To-morrow Mademoiselle is to perform her Easter devotions. I could have wished that she had of her own accord this day mentioned it to the Duchesse d'Orleans, that she had at the same time requested her to pardon all the little things in which she might have offended her, all the faults of which she might have been guilty during the course of her education, and had asked her to bless her child. It is no prejudice to suppose that the benediction of a mother or a father has a tendency to secure happiness; Scripture repeats it a thousand times.

times. I advise you therefore, my dear friend, to write immediately to your mamma a very affectionate letter containing what I have just mentioned; you will be more pleasing to God on this account, in the important act which you are to perform to-morrow.

---

*Friday 2 April 1790, 10 o'clock in the evening.*

**C**ERTAIN reflections have occurred to me upon the subject of this journal, with which it is proper, my dear children, that you should be made acquainted. I account it my happiness to have consecrated to your welfare every hour of my days, and for the most part the study of my evenings, when you are no longer present with me. Next to this happiness, there is nothing that I more ardently desire than to be able one day to render an exact account article by article, of the course of your education to Monseigneur and Madame, to myself, when I shall be in the retreat I propose after the termination of my connection with you, and perhaps, if I should judge it necessary, to the public. The journal of M. Lebrun, the original of which is in my possession, is written partly in his hand and partly in mine: its authenticity is incontestable. The same observation applies to the journal of Mademoiselle Rime. The journal which I am now writing, no doubt, as long as we live together, is of equal authority; but after our separation its evidence will diminish. Its genuineness might be supported by its correspondence with the other journals, by your testimony, and most of all by the force of truth, which is confessed

by the hearts of those who are most anxious to deny it; its authenticity however cannot then be geometrically proved. It may be imputed to me that I had foisted in many of the articles afterwards, and that they had never been submitted to your perusal. In a word you are now my only witnesses. As long as the Duke was upon the spot, I saw him almost every day: he frequently read the Journal, and has even signed a recapitulation of it. He is now absent, and I am not visited by the Duchess, whose avocations will not permit her to come and see Mademoiselle more than two or three times a week\*, and at each visit not for more than a quarter or at most half an hour; nor does her Grace ever come but at that hour of the day when Mademoiselle is not in my apartment and when I am engaged with her other children. All these reasons determine me to render the journal as authentic as possible; and I must therefore request every one of you to set your hands to the following declaration: 1. That from the day on which this journal began, you have read every one of the articles: that they were not read to you by me, but that I gave you the book, you read them yourselves, and of consequence are perfectly acquainted with its contents. 2. That in addition to this, I have every year read over to you the diary of that year, in order to present you at one view with a recollection of your actions, and that there is not a single word that deviates from the most exact and scrupulous veracity. Falshood indeed is the lowest and most contempti-

\* At Paris, where we then were; for when we were in the country her visits were infinitely less frequent.



ble of vices, and I should have been corrupting your morals while I was writing these minutes, if I had in the smallest degree deviated from the truth, if I had disguised your errors and your defects; or if I had in any respect exaggerated or misrepresented the facts I had to record. I request the Duke de Chartres, as the eldest of my pupils, to sign the first.—By the way scrupulous accuracy obliges me to add, that none but the two eldest princes constantly read this journal, day by day, as it was written. Mademoiselle and the rest, who were indeed much less concerned in it, were only acquainted in this successive manner with their own articles and the moral definitions; but they have all been present at the general review, and the two eldest princes, beside their own articles, have read, at the time they were written, the articles of the junior pupils, as well as had the book constantly in their possession to revise it whenever they pleased.

*“ Wednesday, 2 April, 10 o'clock in the evening.”*

“ I have read the above article, and I voluntarily declare that its contents are accurately and minutely true.

“ P. C. D'ORLEANS.”

I now request the signature of the Duke de Montpensier. It is proper I should observe that the two eldest princes signed d'Orleans like their father.

*“ Rue de Provence, Chaussée d'Antin, April 3, 1790.”*

“ I agree in the same testimony as my brother, and am animated by the same sentiments.

“ A. P. C. D'ORLEANS.”

Previously to the signature of the other children, I think proper to inform them that, for the future, I extend to them the permission of revising and consulting this book as often as they please. They may therefore take it from my desk where it always lies, with this condition only, that they do not take it out of the apartment. I grant them this permission, fully satisfied of their discreet use of it, and believing that, in the intimate friendship they entertain for each other, all secrecy is unnecessary: I add that for the future I shall cause each article separately to be signed by the person for whom it shall be written.

ADELA D'ORLEANS\*.

BEAUJOLLOIS.

HENRIETTA SERCEY.

PAMELA OLYMPIA.

CÆSAR DUCREST.

*Saturday, 3 April, 10 o'clock in the evening.*

**I** HAVE had no opportunity of relating a circumstance that has in the mean time afforded me extreme pleasure. Mademoiselle on Thursday last wrote, by my advice, to ask her mother's blessing. The Duchess, instead of answering it, came to her immediately; I was playing with her upon the harp, and her Grace said in the sweetest accent as she entered, " My

\* Mademoiselle d'Orleans among other names was baptized by that of Adela, by which she preferred being called on account of its resemblance to Adelaide, the name of Madame d'Orleans, and also because I had given this name to the heroine of one of my works.

child,

child, I am come to bless you." The expression which accompanied the words went to the heart, and I could have wished that Mademoiselle had fallen on her knees to receive a benediction so dear to her. The Duchess led her at the same instant into another room, where she was alone with her for a quarter of an hour: at the expiration of this period, Mademoiselle returned to my apartment to finish her lesson; I observed the tears swimming in her eyes, a sensibility that was natural, and that delighted me. It was my hope that she would of her own accord, the moment she rose the next morning, write to her mamma to repeat how sensibly she was moved by the proofs she had received of her tenderness. At length I mentioned my desire, when she informed me that she had before resolved to do this, of the truth of which I want no other evidence than her word, as my dear and amiable Adela never disguises or violates the truth. I am sure that she loves, as she ought, a father and a mother so justly deserving of all the affections of her soul; but she is not sufficiently mindful of them when they are absent, a circumstance that gives me the greatest pain. Your behaviour, my child, in general, is less attentive than is becoming, except towards me; and you know that personally I set little value on attentions; I should be more sensible of yours were we separated from each other, as I should in that case attribute them less to the effect of habit. Recollect that if we feel a lively interest in the welfare of our friends only when we see them every day, and absence or separation weakens our attachment, our love is very imperfect. You have so good a heart that I can only as-

cribe your inadvertencies and neglects to the multiplicity of your studies, and the levity of your age; but you are now no longer an infant, and it is necessary that you should correct yourself of this fault, and acquire a more solid character.

“ I have read the above article, &c.

“ ADELA D'ORLEANS.

“ 4 April 1790.”

---

*Saint Leu, 19 April 1790.*

I AM satisfied with you all. The Duke de Chartres mixes more in society, he haunts me less frequently, he is not so eternally pinned to my apron string. He knows the extreme value I affix to his friendship, and should consider it as a proof of my regard that I sometimes receive him so ungraciously when he neglects all that is due to others, to be continually thinking only of me, to follow me every where, to sit always by my side, which gives him the silly air of a little boy afraid to move for an instant out of the sight of his preceptor. Beside, such exclusive preferences are troublesome, and constitute no part of true friendship, which is not to be maintained by caresses and other petty demonstrations of a similar nature fit only for foolish women. Confidence, esteem, a consistent decorum, inviolable fidelity, such are the means by which friendship is to be supported. In fine, there is nothing that appears in my eye more puerile and less manly and becoming than the sort of affection you continually demonstrate towards me, which makes you hear nobody and look at nobody

nobody but me, which never fails to inspire you with dejection and gloom, whenever in a carriage you cannot place yourself by my side, &c. You cannot imagine how disgustful these manners are to all others. Doubt not that through every moment of my life I love you, and if you desire to be agreeable to me, remember that the true method is to render yourself universally amiable.

I have experienced this morning the greatest chagrin. While I was dressing, the Duchess d'Orleans came to take leave of her daughter; her stay was not more than a quarter of an hour, and, as has been customary with her for three months past, she avoided coming into my apartment, and I had not the honour of seeing her. When Mademoiselle returned to my chamber, I perceived that she was in tears, and she informed me that she could not help feeling very sensibly a charge alleged against her, by her mamma, of having behaved coldly to her at a concert which we had three days ago. At this concert Mademoiselle and I played upon the harp, and she had no sooner finished her part than she seated herself by the side of Madame, and never quitted her till the entertainment was at an end. I observed her many times embrace her mamma, and she assures me *upon her honour* that she had not for a single instant merited the reproach. I believe her. In the mean time as her mamma complains, she ought to suppose that she has involuntarily given her cause by some inattention which she does not recollect. I was the more astonished at the accusation, having had a long conversation with Mademoiselle the day preceding the concert, in which she expressed herself in terms of the  
utmost

utmost sensibility and affection for her mother. I described to her the pleasure she would enjoy when her education should be finished, and she would spend all her time with Monseigneur and Madame. I told her that Madame, who had great equality of temper and some angelic virtues, would place all her felicity in making her happy the moment she was acquainted with the character and accomplishments of her daughter. I cited various proofs of goodness which I had witnessed in both her parents. She heard me with delight, and repeated that no daughter could feel a greater tenderness and affection, and that these sentiments were engraven on her heart. She will then, I am sure, redouble her cares and attentions, and employ all the zeal of which she is capable to satisfy Madame of the truth of these feelings.

CHARTRES.

MONTPENSIER.

ADELA D'ORLEANS.

23 April 1790.

. . . . .  
 . . . . . I HAVE omitted to write that about seven or eight days since I had a conversation with the Duke de Chartres with which I was pleased. It was upon the subject of democratic extravagance. His Highness seemed to feel that there was little policy in carrying to excess principles excellent in themselves, but which might by that means become absurd and vicious. I have a right to converse with you upon this subject, and to enjoy your confidence. Long before the revolution I had taught



taught you to despise ridiculous titles, to bestow no real honour but upon virtue and merit, to associate, regardless of birth, with persons distinguished for their talents and integrity, and to consider that among men there was but one true inequality, the inequality that virtue and education establish. I had read to you the shocking code of game laws to excite your detestation of it; and made you promise that you would never avail yourselves of those horrible rights. I had taught you to despise pride and ostentation, and to cultivate the respect and love of the people whose voice alone decided the reputation of princes. Thus you have never received from me either aristocratical principles or an aristocratical education; but at the same time I hate excess which weak minds only can desire. I would have you be faithful to the civic oath you have taken, and proceed no farther than the National Assembly has done; you will otherwise be guilty of a thousand follies and absurdities. I would have you be virtuous patriots and faithful subjects: various important duties are included in this character, which you have sworn to fulfil; and it is only by never violating them that you can obtain the esteem of all parties, and the reputation of which you ought to be ambitious.

. . . . .

27 April 1790.

M. LEBRUN complains in his Journal that the Duke de Montpensier allows himself sometimes to say *by God*. The Duke has so pure a heart, is so distinguished for piety, has so natural and just an aversion to every thing indecent,

cent, dishonest, and licentious, that I am astonished he can pardon in himself such expressions. When you shall be settled in life and have free intercourse with the world, you will find almost all young persons addicted to the abominable vice of swearing. Would you imitate so unworthy an example? I flatter myself that you will not, but will have taste and understanding enough to despise every species of indecency, which proceeds from levity of mind and can afford no sort of satisfaction. It is no excuse for us that others indulge themselves in a criminal practice; there are multitudes however who avail themselves of this plea for drunkenness, debauchery, the low vice of gaming, and a thousand things equally degrading. Reflect that the virtuous class of men is less numerous than those who have received a corrupt education and are without principles, and that you will therefore meet with more bad examples than good. But recollect at the same time that, with your education and the reflections you have been taught to make, you will be wholly inexcusable if you deviate from the right path, and if you are not cited as an example of perfect purity and virtue.

---

30 April 1790.

. . . . .

THE Duke de Chartres has written a number of letters to M. Pieyre, which do honour to his understanding and his heart. The Duke de Montpensier has also written some delightful ones to the Count de Romanoff.

I HAVE

*to her Pupils.*

135

1 May 1790.

. . . . .  
. . . . . I HAVE likewise forgotten to write that the princes, for their own convenience and to avoid a confusion of names, have agreed to sign the articles of this journal with the simple name by which they are respectively called, instead of d'Orleans.

" I have read every article since the 24th instant.

" CHARTRES.

" MONTPENSIER."

---

7 May 1790.

. . . . . AT present the Duchefs d'Orleans comes here only once a week. I could wish Mademoiselle to write to her, without being reminded, at least every two days. An affectionate child should derive great pleasure from writing to her mother every day that she does not see her: this ought to be the more natural to Mademoiselle, as she is daily obliged to compose something out of her own head for the sake of her spelling; and surely it would be more pleasing to write to her mamma, than to write about the weather.

" I have read the preceding article.

" ADELA D'ORLEANS."

---

15 May 1790.

. . . . . THE Duke de Chartres has done a very inconsiderate thing, with which I was not acquainted till yesterday. He had written a letter to M. Pieyre which I thought a good one. I had advised him to keep copies of his letters.

letters. His Highness entrusted a copy of this last letter to M\*\*\*, who has been to Paris and has shewn it to a number of persons, so that it will probably appear in print \*: all this is extremely absurd. The letter might be very well as written to a friend, but it will appear a wretched performance from the press; but were it ever so excellent, it would still be extremely ridiculous to make it public.

I must also mention another thing which has very much displeased me. You wrote me, a few days ago, a letter that in many respects very sensibly affected me; but it contained an expression which I cannot pass over in silence. You say in it that there is nothing upon earth which you so much love as the *new constitution and me*. I am sure that a moment's reflection would have convinced you of the blameable extravagance of this phrase. The persons whom you ought to love infinitely more than me, are those to whom you are indebted for life, and to whom, by their making choice of me for your governess, you will equally owe the education I shall give you. I have no doubt that, when you wrote to me in this style, you imagined that these things would be understood, and that you think and feel properly upon this subject: but this is not sufficient; your expressions should never be equivocal, and I request it as a favour that in future you will give me no reason to tell you of these things, which ought to be very painful to you; not that I suspect you of being deficient in filial affection, but because I know on the contrary this sentiment to be so deeply engraven on your hearts

\* I was mistaken in my conjecture.

that the slightest reproach is calculated most sensibly to afflict you.

“ I have read the preceding article.

“ CHARTRES.”

---

*Saturday, 22 May 1790.*

IT is with extreme pain I write in this journal that, the day before yesterday, Mademoiselle told me a falsehood. It was thus: Mademoiselle, before I rose in the morning, was desirous of writing to the Duchess d'Orleans; and as I was not present to correct her spelling, she applied to Henrietta. When I got up she brought me the letter; I read it, and pointed out a phrase which I knew to be Henrietta's. She asserted, with blushes, that the expression was her own, and that no part of the letter had been dictated to her. As it was impossible I should deceive myself, I charged her directly with falsehood, which she acknowledged the next minute in terms of the deepest regret. Violation of truth is at all times shocking, but the fault was the more heinous in the present instance, as Mademoiselle well knew that I always avoided dictating or even correcting any letters written by herself or her brothers to Monseigneur and Madame, because this would be to deceive them\*; whereas, on the contrary, I could wish them to be as perfectly acquainted with the talents and characters of their children as I myself am. Mademoiselle appeared to be so sensible of her fault, that I

\* A species of deception however to which few preceptors have any scruple; but it was my opinion that, upon all points, probity and delicacy could not be carried too far.

am persuaded she will never again be guilty of any thing similar to it, and the more so as she has naturally a sincere love of integrity and truth. But I have punished her by making her dine and sup alone in her chamber.

“ I have read the above article.

“ ADELA D'ORLEANS.”

26 May 1790.

**I** RECEIVED this day a letter from the Duke d'Orleans, who informs me that, if a war should break out, he will come in person and conduct you to a place where it will be likely to afford you most instruction, and where he will himself stay with you. I saw with pleasure, but without surprise, how much you were moved by the tenderness of this good father, to whom you owe the warmest gratitude. What has he not done for you since you came into the world? He has braved public opinion by committing you to the care of a woman, because he thought her capable of inspiring you with virtuous principles. He has spared no expence in your instruction; and at a time when his affairs obliged him to introduce reforms and to make personal sacrifices, he took care that this economy should not extend to your education. His attentions to you have been truly amiable, instructing you himself to ride on horseback, treating you with the utmost kindness and paternal affection; when absent writing to you regularly; when at Paris coming almost every day to Belle Chasse, and to Saint Leu not less than two or three times a week, and frequently sleeping there that



that he might spend more time with you. You have a just sense of these obligations, and I am very certain that the best of fathers will find in the hearts of his children the recompense which he has a right to expect.

“ I have read the preceding article with the greatest pleasure.

“ CHARTRES.

“ MONTPENSIER.”

---

3 June 1790.

. . . . IN returning from Chauvri, the Duke de Chartres alighted from his horse and travelled on foot a league and a half, by the side of my ass, in roads full of mud and stones. He told me that in going he had been very dull because we could not gallop. But you were in company with your brother and other persons with whom you were acquainted and whom you love: we were all exceedingly cheerful; you alone were grave and melancholy. You cannot say that it was on account of any disagreement with me, as we were upon good terms; but you were dull and tired because you are not sociable, because you derive no pleasure from the felicity of others: and yet all that is necessary to this, is a good heart and a little pleasantness of temper. Do you suppose that at my age and with my turn of mind, it is any great amusement to be jolted and bruised for the space of three or four hours on the back of an ass? Assuredly not; but the excursion delighted me, I was gay without effort, because I enjoyed the happiness of the party. I know, my child, it was from an impulse of friendship that you walked by my side and escorted

corted my ass; but I have a thousand times told you that when we are in company we ought to consult the feelings of every individual; that it is uncivil and absurd to have the air of disliking what affords amusement to others, and, surrounded by our friends, to lavish all our cares upon one person only. When I see you act thus, which I frequently do, it grieves my heart, and it is impossible I should receive with kindness such indecorous attentions: the more I love you, the more offensive they are to me, because they render you extremely disagreeable to every body else. Beside you know that I have naturally an aversion to the being treated by any one with such invidious distinction. I have long cured Mademoiselle and Pamela of thus following me like my shadow and of caring for me alone. I love sociableness above all things, without which there can neither be gaiety nor agreeable parties. You may recollect the many quarrels I have had with Madame de Valence, so justly dear to me, because she had the same desire of being always pinned to my apron string. You cannot therefore be surprised at the coldness with which I treat you on such occasions as these. I wish you to be amiable, and to behave like the rest in our little excursions, with the same good humour and general attention to the company.

It is now three months since \* \* \* has been introduced for the purpose of accompanying Mademoiselle and me in our lessons of music; and during all that time Mademoiselle has not conceived it her duty to display any politeness towards her, nor to ask me whether it did not become her, in a case like this where a person

of

of  
litt  
ma  
des  
and  
war  
prio  
not  
—H  
my  
girl  
last  
har  
pen  
“

T  
Duk

too f  
I felt  
praise  
grief  
sibil  
† 7  
cares,  
ask th  
ing n  
midst  
and  
sible

of talents was concerned, to maké her some little present.\* I know very well that there are many things that we can teach, but I begin to despair of the possibility of teaching *to think*, and of giving to those who are indisposed towards it, a feeling of that decorum and propriety of carriage without which a person is nothing in the world but a mere automaton\*. —From motives of charity I have taken under my protection the little Stéphanie Navoigile, a girl eight years and a half old, and for the last six weeks have given her lessons upon the harp. Mademoiselle has undertaken the expence of her subsistence†.

“ We have read the preceding article.

“ CHARTRES.

“ MONT PENSIER.

“ ADELA D'ORLEANS.”

---

18 June 1790.

. . . . .

THE Duke de Chartres has written to the Duke d'Orleans, and in his letter employs the

\* This is another instance in which the lesson was much too severe for the occasion. My excuse is the ardent desire I felt to see my pupils perfect. I have never blamed or praised them without experiencing strong emotions either of grief or pleasure; and such feelings scarcely admit the possibility of selecting and measuring out one's expressions.

† This child is still with us. She perfectly answers my cares, and will one day possess astonishing talents. Let me ask those who, without knowing me, charge me with busying myself in intrigues and affairs of government, how, in the midst of so many labours, of duties faithfully discharged, and occupations voluntarily undertaken, this could be possible?

follow-

following expression: *May I take the liberty to request of my dear Papa.* This expression, *may I take the liberty*, is a ridiculous piece of ceremony towards a father, and the kindest and the most exemplary of fathers. It is exactly of the same tenour as if one should have said to him, *I have the honour to inform you, &c.* We doubtless owe the most profound respect to one's father and mother, but it is a sentiment and duty too sacred to be expressed in the cold and vulgar forms which we employ towards strangers: it is a sort of *worship*, as the phrase *filial piety* implies, and not a modish etiquette. His highness is old enough to feel all this, but he is in general too inattentive to the propriety and decorum of his expressions.

—In one of our late excursions the Duke de Chartres rode sixteen leagues on horseback. His horse reared and threw him: the Duke displayed the true courage of a man, and great presence of mind; he received no hurt. The Duke de Montpensier evinced upon this occasion extreme sensibility and brotherly affection.

—The Duke de Chartres has requested my permission to read *Telemachus* a second time: he has this book always in his pocket that he may read it at his leisure moments, which affords me great pleasure.—I perceive with singular satisfaction that as the princes advance in age, the more rooted are their sentiments of piety, and the stronger is their admiration of modesty, chastity and virtue. I hesitate not to say that there are no young persons of the same age purer, or more religious without imbecility, without bigotry, because they fully under-

un  
wi  
.

I  
Jou  
der  
pla  
you  
sum  
to p  
hav  
you  
add  
Leb  
for  
men  
an  
wea  
'  
' ne  
' an  
' ke  
' no  
' pe

I H  
sister  
relat

• T  
Lebru

understand religion, and are deeply penetrated with its sublime and perfect morality.

. . . . .

28 June 1790.

I HAVE understood this morning from the Journal of M. Lebrun, and have been considerably surpris'd at the information, that you play at billiards for money. It is in vain that you may tell me that you play but for small sums; you have but small sums in your power to play for. It is strange that, after all you have said to me upon the subject of gaming, you cannot interest yourselves in a game of address without playing for money: for M. Lebrun observes that since you have played for money you have entered into the amusement with much relish and activity. This is an instance of uncommon inconsistency and weakness.

‘ I have promised my friend that I would never game for so much as a single crown, and she may be assured that I have faithfully kept my promise: I have neither played nor betted at billiards even the sum of two pence\*.

‘ CHARTRES.’

1 July 1790.

I HAVE seen with pleasure that you act consistently with your sentiments and opinions, relative to the new constitution; that you have

\* This was true; I had misunderstood the Journal of M. Lebrun.

been

been charmed with the suppression of titles and all those puerile distinctions of which fools only can be vain, and that you wish the suppression to extend to ribbons and every decoration of a similar kind. For my own part I could wish that, as to ribbons, those who have justly acquired them by military services and brilliant exploits might be permitted to keep them. In that case M. de Chartres, for example, who has done nothing, would quit his, while the military officers who have obtained it by serving their country, would still wear it. I am sure this idea will strike you as equitable.

---

6 July 1790.

THE Journal of M. Lebrun has, for several days past, been unfavourable to M. de Chartres; he encroaches continually upon his hours of study to write to me, a proceeding that gives me considerable pain. You will soon, my child, be your own master, we shall be separated: it is then I will thank you to write, to open your heart to me, to preserve towards me that intimate confidence, the only true proof of cordial friendship, and which I shall merit to my last hour by my sincere and ardent affection.

‘ I have read the above article, and I hope  
 ‘ that I shall render myself worthy of the  
 ‘ maternal tenderness, of which my friend  
 ‘ gives me so many proofs.

‘ CHARTRES.’

IT



16 July 1790.

IT affords me inexpressible satisfaction to see that your minds are penetrated with a sense of religion. In M. de Montpensier piety is become a sentiment so tender, so rational and so profound as to be wholly unexampled at his age.—On the day of the federation you did a thing which I very much disapproved. Before the arrival of the king you went to the Champ de Mars, where you were highly applauded; but you had no business there, and one might suppose that you went on purpose to be applauded: beside you ought not to have taken a step of this kind without consulting me; I was no farther off than the next house to you. Upon the subject of public applause my opinion is this—We ought to set the highest value upon popular favour, because it is only to be obtained by virtue or the appearance of virtue. To be admired in fashionable circles, a few frivolous accomplishments are sufficient; but the people will have virtues and good actions, and it is for this reason that their approbation ought to be estimated so highly. It is their prerogative to bestow true fame; at the same time that it is injudicious and absurd to seem to covet their applauses; this would at once be a wound to modesty and an exhibition of stupid conceit. We must take care however not to seem to set light by their approbation; that would be a folly of another sort more conceited and more intolerable. It is our wisdom therefore not in the smallest degree to covet their applause, nor to affect to fly from it, but at the same time to receive it whenever it is

VOL. I. H bestowed

bestowed with all possible deference and gratitude. Remember, my children, that good taste and graceful manners can never exist without complaisance, propriety and decorum: now there is nothing more indecorous than to appear to hold the public in contempt, and to think so highly of ourselves as to believe that we do not stand in need of their suffrage. Regard it always as a respectable judge. Never attempt to corrupt and seduce it by mean flattery and hypocritical virtue; you would thus defeat your purpose; but desire ardently its esteem, and merit it by purity of conduct and genuine worth. Next to the testimony of our conscience, its approbation is the noblest recompense of virtue.

‘ I have read the preceding article, and am happy in being able to say that I previously entertained the same sentiments as my friend.

‘ CHARTRES.’

‘ I also agree perfectly in opinion with my friend.

‘ MONT PENSIER.’

26 July 1790.

**M. DE BEAUJOLLOIS**, without intending it, struck M. de Chartres this morning on the chin with the butt end of his musket, and M. de Chartres in revenge inhumanly thrust the musket in his brother's face. M. de Chartres has something in his natural temper that leads him, previously to reflection, into extreme brutality. I am not tempted to soften the word, for I will never explain away the dictates of justice and truth; at the same time I confess that

that there is an integrity in his character which I do flatter myself will ultimately render him more gentle in his manners and more delicate in his practices, qualities with which my affection and zeal have hitherto failed to inspire him. —Madame d'Orleans came yesterday to dine with her children. I proposed to her to change the hour of Mademoiselle's studies, that she might walk alone with her for half an hour after dinner, which she accepted. Mademoiselle, when she returned from this walk, was overcome with joy; she told me that she had talked a great deal with her dear, dear Mamma; that she had expressed to her how delighted she was to have passed three hours and a half in her company, a circumstance which had not happened for nine months; and that she was mortified and afflicted at not seeing her oftener than once in eight or ten days, and then only for a few minutes. Madame d'Orleans replied that she had been prevented by a multiplicity of business, which, in the absence of M. d'Orleans, may easily be conceived; but she accompanied this detail with the most tender expressions imaginable, and added that she should now come oftener to see her children\*.

H 2

I parti-

\* This however was not verified, though Madame d'Orleans certainly intended it when she so expressively and feelingly made the promise. But she was dissuaded from it by the person whose counsels she followed, and who was afraid that, if she were to spend time enough in our retreat to converse and come to an explanation with her children, her reconciliation with me would be the consequence. We have remarked in general that whenever she has been left to her own guidance, the first emotions of her heart have been those of kindness and affection, as was evidently the case when M. de Chartres confessed to her the heinous offence he had committed in having told her a falsehood: she received him

H 2

at

I participated in the feelings of Mademoiselle on this occasion, whose heart was penetrated with gratitude and joy; and the sensibility and extreme affection which she displayed towards a mother so virtuous and so worthy to be loved, makes her still more dear to me; not that I ever doubted her possessing these sentiments, but when I see them so naturally and forcibly expressed, my regard for my dear Adela is necessarily redoubled.

‘ I have read the preceding article.

‘ CHARTRES.

‘ ADELA D’ORLEANS.

25 August 1790.

**F**OR several days we were all three upon terms of reserve and coldness: yesterday evening a reconciliation took place with that frankness, that effusion and sensibility peculiar to honest hearts, and we spent in consequence a delightful evening. My children may be assured that whenever I behave coldly to them, my mind is far from being at ease, and I acknowledge that from a too lively interest in their welfare, I am frequently too severe. When you do any thing that I disapprove, I magnify in imagination the consequences of it; but at the same time when your actions are deserving of commendation, my joy and the

at the moment with that indulgence, sensibility and incomparable goodness which are natural to her; but she treated him the next day with the utmost coldness, because she had in the mean time related the circumstance to her counsellor, who had incensed her mind. We have made the same remark, on all occasions, within these two years.

hopes

hopes I derive from them as to your future life have no bounds. I am in general blunt when any one displeases me, and have not in that case the amenity I could wish: were I able to chide you with as much gentleness, as I praise you with affection, when you merit it, I should make a stronger impression on your minds; but education has not corrected my natural defects; it was very much neglected, and it left me a thousand imperfections. In my treatment of you I have cured myself of a quickness of temper that was highly derogatory to me; but I have substituted in its place a sort of dryness and ill humour which often actuates me when I am offended. When we are no longer young it commonly happens thus, we correct ourselves of a fault by exchanging it for another. You, my children, who are in the first stage of youth, may cure yourselves entirely of your defects: avoid particularly those which I have confessed to you, from seeing how injurious they are to me. How noble would be the resolve to approach every day nearer to perfection! and it is a project which could not fail of succeeding when formed at the age of fifteen or sixteen years.

‘I have read the preceding article.

‘CHARTRES.

‘MONTPENSIER.’

---

11 September 1790.

**A**BOUT a fortnight ago Mademoiselle and her brothers asked leave of Madame d'Orleans to dine with her the following Sunday. She

consented, but on the preceding Saturday she came to tell them that an affair had happened which would prevent her receiving them. The children expressed a desire that she would name some other day, and she accordingly appointed Sunday se'ennight. The day before the time, which was yesterday, she called upon Mademoiselle at half after eight in the morning and informed her, that she could no longer permit her children to come to see her, that she had very strong reasons for this, which she did not choose to mention, but which she flattered herself would soon be done away, and that then she would receive them. She afterwards asked Mademoiselle a variety of questions relative to me, and among others, *if it were really true that she loved me?* Mademoiselle related all this to me with the utmost concern and grief. Nearly the same things were repeated by Madame d'Orleans to her sons. This information is very painful to me: I should never have undertaken the charge of your education if I had not been as earnestly solicited by Madame d'Orleans as by your father; she was satisfied with my cares and overwhelmed me with her kindness till the period of the month of October last; since that time, without assigning any reason, she has treated me with an extreme rigour, of which you have all been witnesses; but I flatter myself that these clouds will disperse. She is naturally so good, so virtuous, that she will at last do me justice, and I hope that the return of her friendship and confidence will afford me the possibility of continuing in a situation, which my affection for you renders so dear to me

me  
wh

Y  
nefs  
inte  
con  
seve  
trea  
and  
inter  
'  
' pr  
' fix  
' to  
' re

IN  
sion  
hono  
prop  
he to  
from  
shoul  
\* I  
able to  
would  
him in



me, but which I cannot retain in the state in which things are at present.

‘ I have read the above article.

‘ CHARTRES.

‘ MONTPENSIER.’

---

18 September 1790.

**Y**OU say that I do not treat you with kindness: assume the man, shew yourself in your intercourse with me not an infant full of inconsistency and boyish tricks, but a youth of seventeen years, who knows his duty, who treats his friend with attention and kindness; and you may then depend upon the most uninterrupted marks of affection from me.

‘ My heart has been sensibly moved by the preceding article. The period my friend fixes is a very short one, but I promise her to exert my utmost efforts to do what she requires of me\*.

‘ CHARTRES.’

---

20 September 1790.

**I**N the carriage yesterday Cæsar took possession of a place, which was not the place of honour, but which M. de Chartres thought proper to prefer; and without saying a word he took Cæsar by the shoulders, thrust him from his seat, and placed himself in it. I should have thought if this place were agree-

\* I had told him to behave to me in a manner more suitable to his age, and I promised him if, only for a month, he would put off his freaks and his wantonness, I would treat him in a manner agreeable to his wishes.

able to him, that he would have had the civility to have asked for it; but this mode of seizing it is as aristocratic as it is ill bred.

The day before yesterday the Duke de Chartres rose from table four minutes before supper was over, and left Mademoiselle, Henrietta and Pamela \*. I observed to him that he might sit a little longer since he had no particular business. He told me he had done his meal: I had my doubts about this answer, but I will not positively affirm that at seventeen years of age one ought to be more polite. In the carriage yesterday for the first hour or two he was very gloomy and very silent, he became afterwards a little more sociable.

‘ I have read the preceding article.

‘ CHARTRES.

‘ MONTPENSIER.’

4 October 1790.

AN excellent day. Madame came yesterday with M. d'Orleans: she entered my chamber, embraced me with great goodness, and told her children that the clouds which had hung over her mind were dispersed, and that every thing would now be as it was before the month of October last. To-morrow we shall dine with her.

5 October 1790.

WE have dined at the Palais-Royal. Madame d'Orleans informed her daughter that she should come once a week, in the morning, to take her out for an hour, and Mademoiselle

\* I was not at table, but I was in the chamber, and he merely quitted his supper to come to me.

was

was highly delighted at the intelligence. M. de Chartres has told me that he yesterday asked Madame d'Orleans for her picture in oil colours and in miniature. I have advised him to fix the latter to his watch that he might always wear it. I ought to add that, about ten or twelve days ago, I had a conversation with him in which he evinced, with an effusion of heart, that was truly enchanting, the warmest affection for his mother. He said, among other things, that when his education should be finished he would devote all the time he could spare from his studies to Madame d'Orleans and his father. I advise him to set apart two days in the week, beside Sunday, for dining with them, and not to come to Belle Chasse on those days till six o'clock in the evening; an arrangement that will be the least injurious to his studies \*.

I proposed, a day or two since, to M. d'Orleans that you might without delay be permitted to pay a visit of five or six days to M. de Penthievre, which he very much approved. He informed me this evening that the same idea had occurred to Madame d'Orleans, and that she would herself accompany you in a few days, which is the more kind and obliging in her, as she did not intend to go till the month of November, and as, upon M. d'Orleans ex-

\* M. de Chartres and his brother, as has been already seen by the Journal, had expressed a strong desire that their education might continue till they were respectively of the age of seventeen years and a half; but M. d'Orleans wished his eldest son to have his liberty 6 October 1790, when he would be seventeen. M. de Chartres was extremely mortified at a decision that deprived him of six months regular studies which I had prepared with the utmost care: for myself, I was, if possible, more afflicted than he, for I conceive that, to be complete, the education of a young person should be continued till the age of twenty.

pressing a desire that your visit might no longer be deferred, she has deranged all her plans for the pleasure of going with you.

The day has been excellent in all respects, and I am perfectly satisfied with my dear children.

M. de Beaujollois is about to prepare himself for his first communion; he has spoken to me this evening upon the subject in a manner that very much pleased me. I hope, dear child, that in your preparation for this important act you will imitate the fervent piety of your brothers, and that your mind in general will take a serious and rational turn: you have so excellent a heart and so many good qualities, that when you shall have acquired greater command of yourself and a little more application, you will be a charming creature.

‘ I have read the above article.

‘ CHARTRES.

‘ MONTPENSIER.

‘ ADELA D’ORLEANS.

.....

.....

7 October 1790.

**I** HAVE just received a note from Madame d’Orleans, in which she communicates her design of taking out Mademoiselle every Tuesday, Thursday, and Saturday, from twelve to one o’clock or a quarter after, and that on Sundays, when I do not dine with them, she will take out the children at three and bring them home at six. As I am exceedingly desirous, and have always desired, that Madame  
d’Orleans

d'Orleans should see Mademoiselle as frequently as could possibly be made compatible with her studies, I have just written an answer in which I propose to her farther methods for that purpose. Henrietta will be so good as to copy it in this place.

---

*Copy of my Answer to Madame Orleans.*

**MADÉMOISELLE** shall certainly be ready at the times Madame d'Orleans desires. I have a farther method to propose by which Madame may have the company of her daughter for a still longer time without injury to her studies. We have not yet finished our tour of Monuments, Cabinets, &c. to be seen in Paris. On those days therefore, when our tour shall fall on the days Madame has fixed for visiting Mademoiselle (since we shall perhaps be obliged sometimes to take those days) Madame may, if she think fit, without the least injury to our plan, conduct Mademoiselle to the place of rendezvous, so as to be there at the same time as her brothers, or at a different time if that be more agreeable. I will in that case furnish Madame d'Orleans with a list of what we have already seen, that she may perceive what there is that remains to be seen: on these days Madame, without any derangement of our studies, may detain her daughter for an hour and a half, and this on the very days that she has not fixed for her visits, as well as on those which she has. She shall always receive notice of our tour the evening before it is proceeded upon. I propose this only for the winter season in Paris, because, having already  
made

made all the excursions which are most instructive and interesting, those which remain are not of great importance, so that indeed Mademoiselle might wholly dispense with them, were it not that they will complete the course in which she is already engaged? Madame will therefore adopt and pursue them if she think proper.

‘ I have read the above article.

‘ CHARTRES.

‘ MONTPENSIER.

‘ ADELA D’ORLEANS.

‘ BEAUJOLLOIS.’

8 October 1790.

I HAVE requested Mademoiselle, who dines alone to-morrow with Madame d’Orleans, to inform her that if, beside Sunday, she wishes to have the company of her daughter on Monday, I shall be delighted, as I would in that case accept an invitation which I have received to dinner. I have desired Mademoiselle farther to inform her that when my aunt returns, which will be soon, I mean to dine with her once a fortnight, and shall take with me only M. de Montpensier, and that Madame may therefore have the company of her daughter on those days also. It is a pleasure to me to see in Madame d’Orleans a desire of spending more time with Mademoiselle; the gratification would be greater were this time to pass at Belle Chasse, but at any rate I rejoice exceedingly that she at length wishes to know her daughter as perfectly as I know her; it has been my constant desire; I have written  
this



this journal for this sole purpose, and have urged Madame, upon every occasion and in the presence of her children, to accompany us in our tours and to reside with us in the country.

M. de Chartres has dined to-day with Madame d'Orleans.—He spoke to me this evening, with a charming sensibility, of the pain he feels at seeing me less frequently. I replied, that he ought to console himself by the consideration that the liberty he enjoys affords him the surest means of proving to me his affection and gratitude; that is, by preserving his religious principles and the purity of his manners; by being an excellent son, a fond brother and a good citizen. Let him be all this, and his duties towards me will be completely discharged. I see also with satisfaction how painful it is to him to be separated from his brother, and how closely their affectionate hearts are united. Ever preserve, dear children, the sentiments you at present entertain, and believe that there is in life but one real felicity, that of loving those whom we are bound to love, and of having a pure conscience.

‘ I have read the above article.

‘ CHARTRES.

‘ MONTPENSIER.

‘ ADELA D'ORLEANS.’

. . . . .

---

13 October 1790.

**M**ADEMOISELLE is in perfect ecstacy at the tenderness with which she is treated by  
Madame

Madame d'Orleans. She can only prove her gratitude by an affection and gratitude that shall know no bounds. I have proposed to Madame to undertake herself the instruction of her daughter in mythology, and I shall furnish her with all my manuscripts for that purpose: she accepted the proposal with alacrity, as well as another which I made her, of being present occasionally at M. de Beaujollois's preparation, held at the Palais Royal, for his first communion; a preparation at which M. Lebrun cannot be present, and which therefore would not have been held but under the inspection of a valet de chambre: for this reason I particularly wished for the presence and countenance of Madame d'Orleans.

' I have read the above article.

' CHARTRES.

' MONTPENSIER.

' ADELA D'ORLEANS.

28 October 1790.

WE have spent some days at Noizi. M. de Montpensier, in attempting for the second time to leap over a very high bar, was thrown from his horse on the turf, and in the fall the horse kicked him in the head. He got up immediately and came running and skipping to my carriage, assuring me, with a smiling countenance, that he had received no kind of hurt: it was only by examining his head that I perceived a swelling larger than an egg. I praise him not for his courage; he did no more than every man ought to do; but I feel all the value of

of that instantaneous impulse which led him to conquer an acute pain, and fly to assure us of his perfect safety. There is nothing in the world so noble, and striking as sensibility and courage united. The next morning M. de Montpensier was blooded. He rose as usual, spent the day in reading, writing and drawing, and the next day resumed all his studies.

MONTPENSIER.

. . . . .  
. . . . .

1 November 1790.

**Y**OUR studies go on well. M. de Chartres prosecutes his with greater application than is required of him. As to manners, religion, virtue, affection for his father and mother, friendship for me, and general prudence of conduct, he is every thing that my fond heart can wish.

CHARTRES.

MONTPENSIER.

3 November 1790.

**F**ROM several things which M. de Chartres has mentioned, I am well assured that Madame d'Orleans was displeased with him for repeating some circumstances of absolute indifference in relation to her. I am certain that if Madame had mentioned to him the most trifling circumstance in the world, and desired him  
not

not to acquaint me with it, he never would have opened his mouth upon the subject: but since these matters of indifference, communicated to him without any precaution, have been a source of displeasure to Madame, I have intreated all her children never, upon any account, to repeat to me any part of her conversation, and have desired them to inform her of my resolution upon the subject. At the same time I give them full liberty to report to Madame d'Orleans every thing I say, and every thing that concerns me.

M. de Chartres and his sister have expressed the most lively grief at the extreme coldness with which Madame d'Orleans has treated them for this fortnight past, particularly when they are alone with her, and for which they are unable to assign any reason. I have told them that time, persevering affection on their part, and uniform propriety of conduct, would finally succeed in making Madame d'Orleans every thing they could wish towards her children. As I am not at all able to remedy the evil, I wish them to say no more to me directly or indirectly upon the subject; and, in short, I once more absolutely forbid, upon any occasion, conversation of this nature.

M. de Chartres has been received with unanimous applause into the club of Jacobins.—His speech was admirable. He goes to-morrow with his sister upon a visit of three days to M. de Penthièvre.

CHARTRES.

MONT PENSIER.

ADELÀ D'ORLEANS.

BEAUJOLLOIS.

THE

22 November 1790.

THE conduct of M. de Chartres continues to be pure and perfect in all respects. He dines regularly, without having once failed, three times a week with Madame d'Orleans, beside seeing her every morning and evening when she is to receive him; and he dines about once a fortnight with M. d'Orleans, which is all his father asks of him on account of his studies. The rest of his time is spent in study at Belle Chasse, in the National Assembly, in the Philanthropic Society and the Society of Jacobins. By my advice he goes three times a week to the Hotel-Dieu to dress wounds and learn to bleed\*, which his brothers learn also. In short, I cannot too highly praise his good sense, his general conduct, and the sincerity of his friendship to me. He rewards me, I confess, infinitely beyond what I dared hope, and confirms me more every day in the delightful certainty (without which there would be no happiness for me upon earth) that he will be the purest, the most virtuous of men and the best possible friend. I flatter myself that his brother will afford me equal satisfaction: there is every appearance and promise of the same sentiments and the same manner of thinking.

CHARTRES.

\* A very benevolent study, and highly necessary to those who are fond of travelling. It was an essential part of education among the ancients, as may be seen in the Iliad; and I am persuaded it will hereafter be thought equally useful in modern education. In my two essays upon the public education of women and upon that of the people, I have enumerated all advantages to be derived from it.

‘ I pro-

‘ I promise to realize the hopes of my good  
 ‘ and tender friend, and will endeavour that  
 ‘ in this respect there shall be no difference  
 ‘ between my brother and me.

‘ MONTPENSIER.’

30 November 1790.

**S**TUDY has gone on at a slow pace for several days past. M. de Chartres does not now make any use of his leaden weights in the morning. His Latin is passed over in a very careless and negligent way. The day before yesterday I was in a closet, from which, without his perceiving me, I saw him take a lesson with M. Allyon, that is, recline for half an hour on a chair like a person indisposed, without hearing or answering a single word. M. de Chartres says that he was afflicted because I appeared to be angry with him. In the first place, I was not angry with him; and if I had been angry, was that a reason for shutting himself up with a master to do nothing, to pretend to take a lesson, and at the same time to pay no attention to it, and to give way thus unworthily to his ill humour?

I advise M. de Chartres, besides his journal, to keep a book of accounts, and to spend none of his pocket-money without inserting in this book the use to which it is applied, with the date: this is a thing of more consequence through the whole course of our lives than we are apt to imagine.

I always forget to write that, for about three months, I have made Henrietta and Pamela learn to dress wounds. For two months they have



have practised alternately twice a day upon a female belonging to the house, who has a very considerable wound in her leg, and they engage in this office with all the humanity and zeal which it demands. Mademoiselle d'Orleans also learns, and is very assiduous.

‘I have read the preceding article, and hope never to give my dear friend cause for a similar reproach. As to the book of accounts, I have already begun one by her advice.

‘CHARTRES.

‘MONTFENSIER.’

IT is now upwards of a fortnight that Mademoiselle has requested me to resume at Belle Chasse my lessons in mythology, as Madame neglects to give her the smallest instruction. When I proposed to Madame d'Orleans to undertake this office, I informed her that I should prohibit Mademoiselle from taking any more lessons here, and should avoid giving her any myself, that she might be indebted for her knowledge to Madame solely; and I added at the same time, that I would lend her my manuscripts upon the subject, which are very considerable. As I am not therefore willing to resume these lessons without knowing her intentions, I have written her a note of which the following is a copy.

*Copy of my note to Madame d'Orleans.*

Mademoiselle has for more than a fortnight requested me to resume my lessons of mythology. Her reason is that, as her time with Madame is chiefly spent in taking the air or going to shops, instead of improving in this branch.

branch of knowledge, she will soon lose what she has acquired, unless her studies are resumed at Belle Chasse. Madame will do me the favour to inform me of her intentions, as I shall not be willing to engage in these lessons till I know whether it be agreeable to her. I shall only take the liberty of observing, that this study is indispensably necessary in society, and that Mademoiselle, whose memory is by no means strong, will never make any proficiency, if she do not regularly receive every day a lesson of half an hour.

ADELA D'ORLEANS.

1 December 1790.

MADAME d'Orleans has this day answered my letter. In the mean time I have learned from Mademoiselle a circumstance of which I was before ignorant, that Madame sometimes gave her a lesson in the carriage as they drove through the streets, which Mademoiselle considered as of no value, as she found it impossible to hear a syllable of it. The following is a copy of Madame d'Orleans' letter.

' MADAM,

' I HAVE followed exactly the method  
' which you communicated to me by my  
' daughter: but I found it insufficient for her  
' acquiring any useful knowledge of mythology, and it was my intention to speak to  
' you upon the subject. I entreat you to inform me, by writing, what method you may  
' think proper to substitute in its stead, and  
' on my days of taking out my daughter I will  
' come

' come half an hour sooner or detain half an  
' hour later, as may be most convenient to  
' you, and this half hour I mean to conse-  
' crate wholly to mythology. On the other  
' days, if you are desirous of instructing her  
' yourself, her progress will be only the more  
' rapid.'

*My Answer.*

3 December 1790.

' I KNOW not what Mademoiselle has told  
' Madame d'Orleans, respecting my mode of  
' instruction; but I had myself the honour of  
' informing her that a lesson of half an hour  
' would be necessary, reading the whole aloud  
' to the pupil, and at the end of each page  
' desiring the pupil to repeat, not memoriter  
' and word for word, but the sense of what  
' has been read, and finally at the end of the  
' lesson summing up the plan of the whole.  
' To a rapid proficiency it is indispensable that  
' we write every week a recapitulation of the  
' lessons of the week, in order the more  
' strongly to imprint them on the mind of the  
' pupil. Such is the method I have constant-  
' ly followed. That observed by Madame has  
' not succeeded, because the lessons were given  
' with no regularity, and always in a carriage  
' as she passed through the streets of Paris.  
' It is impossible in this case, from the noise  
' of her own, the rattling of other carriages,  
' and the distraction occasioned by a thousand  
' objects in the streets, that a child should be  
' capable of the least attention. In travelling  
' on the high roads I have never been able to  
' read aloud to my pupils with any advan-  
' tage, unless the ground has been soft, or  
' the

‘ the roads so bad as to oblige us to go a very  
 ‘ gentle pace.

‘ Madame desires an additional half hour,  
 ‘ beside the hour and a quarter she had be-  
 ‘ fore requested. I shall only have the honour  
 ‘ to observe that Mademoiselle’s time is so  
 ‘ fully occupied at Belle Chasse, that this half  
 ‘ hour will deprive her of her singing lesson  
 ‘ in the morning, or in the afternoon of her  
 ‘ drawing, from which half an hour is already  
 ‘ taken for the sake of her attending Madame,  
 ‘ so that not a moment will be left. Having  
 ‘ stated this, I shall leave it to Madame to  
 ‘ do as she thinks proper, and shall acquiesce  
 ‘ in her decision. I have already executed the  
 ‘ intention expressed at the conclusion of Ma-  
 ‘ dame’s letter, by commencing with Made-  
 ‘ moiselle a course of mythology.’

---

4 December 1790.

**M**ADAME d’Orleans called upon me this morning and did me the honour to say that in future she should content herself with taking out Mademoiselle, and should give her no farther lessons in mythology. This task therefore will now devolve wholly upon myself, and as I have done for several days past, I shall give this lesson in the afternoon with her lesson of Orthography.

ADELA D’ORLEANS.

---

15 January, 1791.

**Y**OUR studies go on well. M. de Char-  
 tres conducts himself with perfect propriety,  
 and makes a very virtuous use of his liberty.

M. D’OR-

30 January 1791.

**M.** D'ORLEANS has informed me that M. de Montpensier will quit me in the spring, as his military promotion makes it necessary that he should go into garrison. I have represented that he is but fifteen years old, and that his education is not finished: M. d'Orleans persists. He is a very affectionate father, and you cannot doubt, my child, but he thinks this arrangement to be for your advantage: but I wish you to understand that it is not I who quit you, and that the benefit you have hitherto derived from my cares makes me extremely desirous of devoting a few years more to your education.

.....  
' I have read the above article.

' CHARTRES.

' MONTPENSIER.'

---

1 March 1791.

**A** MULTIPLICITY of intestine troubles have obliged me to discontinue this Journal; but I have continued my lessons with the same assiduity, and have been perfectly satisfied with my dear pupils. M. de Montpensier is very attentive to his studies, and has made considerable progress. He discovers an admirable talent for painting, and his proficiency in this art is inconceivable. M. de Chartres still preserves his principles and manners in all their purity. Since he has enjoyed his liberty, he has not failed of seeing Madame d'Orleans at least

least once a day and often twice, beside dining with her regularly three times a week. He dines at Belle Chasse once or twice a week only; but he comes every day to take two or three hours lessons and sometimes more. The rest of his time is devoted to M. d'Orleans, to the National Assembly, the Philanthropic Society, the Club of Jacobins, and some private acts of beneficence and humanity. Such conduct, at seventeen years, without a monitor or guide, is worthy of esteem and encomium. Preserve invariably, dear child, these excellent sentiments. Be always the most affectionate of sons; consider it as your happiness and glory to discharge every obligation to a father and a mother whom you love, and whose felicity depends on your virtues; ever love your country and virtue; preserve at all times your respect for religion and that contempt of pride, that tender concern for the unfortunate and that generosity which are natural to your character, and you will make that friend happy who has consecrated ten years of her life to your service.

‘ I have read the preceding article.

‘ CHARTRES.

‘ MONTPENSIER.’

---

29 March 1791.

**M.** DE MONTPENSIER behaves to me in a charming manner, which pleases me the more, as he has known, for more than three months, that I shall soon cease to have any authority over him. His heart is excellent: I only recommend to him to correct himself of a quickness of temper. M. Lebrun frequently complains



complains of the pettish manner in which he treats his people for meer trifles: I request it as a favour of my child that he will put some restraint upon himself in this particular. I can say in general, that his behaviour to his servants is good, and generous when they stand in need of his succour; but he is impatient upon frivolous occasions, and speaks to them harshly: should this become a habit, it will be a real blot in his character. His nurse is just brought to bed; he has been of his own accord to see her, and has given her all the savings of his pocket-money to contribute to her comfort. He has done, to my knowledge, within six months, many acts of this kind, and in the right manner, without the least ostentation and with extreme simplicity. His mind also acquires solidity: he has interested himself warmly in the revolution, is still attentive to the situation of affairs, and displays in this respect great penetration.

As to M. de Beaujollois, he preserves at all times his happy disposition and a heart sensible and grateful; but his studies for six months past have been indifferent: it is true that, during four months out of these six, Madame d'Orleans has sent for him every morning, and he has staid with her for an hour and a half, beside an hour in the evening, which has been very injurious to him: it was that he might sit to the different painters for his picture. Now that these portraits are finished, I hope he will resume his studies with ardour. His sentiments are excellent, and I hesitate not to say superior to his age. He displays already the patriotism of his brothers, and he composed the other day a little piece upon this subject, by

way of theme. It was an excellent performance for his age: he enumerated with perspicuity and good sense the reasons of his attachment to the revolution, and concluded thus: *Such are the sentiments of Beaujollois.* He told me the other Day that Madame Desfrois had given him an aristocratic lecture, which she accompanied with a present of dried cherries; that he answered her in two words, but *like a good patriot*, and that, having done this, he accepted the cherries and eat them *without scruple*. I observed to him that his answer would have been more firm if he had refused the cherries, and I added some reflections which he was very capable of understanding, as he possesses two qualities that are seldom united, a sound judgment and considerable acuteness.

‘ I have read the preceding article.

‘ CHARTRES.

‘ MONT PENSIER.

‘ BEAUJOLLOIS.’

---

16 May 1791.

**I** RETURNED here on Tuesday, the 12th of this month. The trouble and agitation which my mind has undergone, would not permit me to resume this Journal till to-day. I am doubtless happy to find myself in the midst of my dear pupils, who have given me so many proofs of their affection and of the tenderest gratitude, and to behold once more the persons who compose this house, of whom there is not an individual that has not some claim upon my heart. But my happiness is

Est

not unaccompanied with vexation. Had I been invited directly by Madame d'Orleans, it would have been perfect, and this would certainly have been the case but for the influence and advice of the person who has been the cause of all our misfortunes. In the mean time Madame d'Orleans, in one of her last letters previous to my return, very manifestly authorised the invitation. I had declared to M. d'Orleans, at my departure, that no consideration upon earth should ever prevail with me to resume my function, but a letter from Madame d'Orleans expressing her desire that I would do so. I did not foresee the deplorable state to which my absence would reduce Mademoiselle, but I was sure that she would be deeply afflicted, and I was not without hope that, after a few months, Madame d'Orleans, apprehensive that a continued sorrow might be injurious to her daughter's health, would be induced to this measure. I believe that had the grief of Mademoiselle been less poignant it would have served us more effectually. No fears would then have been entertained from Madame d'Orleans being the witness of it: she would have been permitted to come to Paris to dry up the tears of her daughter, had they flowed with less impetuosity. Mademoiselle would have been able to talk to her, and of consequence to have softened her; and she would certainly have obtained in a few months, perhaps in a much shorter period, what seventeen days absence was unable to effect. But Mademoiselle, of an age when reason and fortitude as yet imperfect, could not govern her extreme sensibility. M. d'Orleans, terrified at her wretched situation and the alarming symp-

toms which, instead of diminishing, every day increased, resolved, after having withstood this spectacle for twelve or thirteen days, to calm her feelings by giving her the strongest hopes of my speedy recal. A few hours previous to this resolution, a new courier had been dispatched to Madame d'Orleans; informing her of the exact state of things, of the dreadful fears that were entertained respecting the health of Mademoiselle, and conjuring her to invite me to return. Her answer was not such as M. d'Orleans wished, but it contained a passage expressive of what I have related, implying that she consented to my recal. M. d'Orleans might certainly have acted without this consent, a father being master of his children; but he conceived that it was necessary to influence me. In truth, had the sorrows of Mademoiselle been more moderate, nothing but the honour of a line from Madame d'Orleans expressly requesting it, could have determined me to return; but my concern for the health and life of Mademoiselle has prevailed, as it ought, over every other consideration. 'If you do not speedily return, there is every reason to fear the life of Mademoiselle.' Such was the account I received, and I came without delay. Let us hope, my children, that time will shew to Madame d'Orleans in its true light the malignity of those who have thus advised her, and who have succeeded in making her avow openly desires contrary to those of M. d'Orleans. In obeying the one lament that you are not better able to obey the other; lament the opposition of opinions and sentiments that divides them; employ all your cares and affection to reconcile

M.  
me in  
fication  
me.  
finishing  
amiabl  
Madam  
me to  
a requir  
to me

reconcile and unite them: it is a duty sacredly incumbent upon you, and which your ardent attachment to two persons so dear to you and to each other, should lead you naturally and without effort to discharge.

Mademoiselle has, since my return, written to her mother; her letter was exactly what it ought to have been, extremely affectionate. I have sent a copy of it to M. d'Orleans by his order; who has also requested to have copies of all the letters which Mademoiselle may write to Madame d'Orleans, a request with which I shall comply. As to the letters Mademoiselle may receive from her mother, I shall not see them; it is a law which I have for eighteen months imposed upon myself, and I will ever faithfully observe it.

' I have read the preceding article.

' CHARTRES.

' MONTPENSIER.

' BEAUJOLLOIS.

' ADELA D'ORLEANS.'

---

20 May 1791.

**M. DE BEAUJOLLOIS** has expressed to me in the most affectionate manner the mortification he feels in being obliged to part with me. I should have had much pleasure in finishing the education of a young person so amiable and of such peculiar sensibility; but Madame d'Orleans has positively required of me to resign my connection with her children, a requisition that was no sooner communicated to me than it was received with the most en-

ture compliance. Nothing but an apprehension conceived for the life of Mademoiselle could have recalled me; it was then my duty to return. The reason however that has once more united me to Mademoiselle, cannot have place in the case of M. de Beaujollois; I therefore make this painful sacrifice without hesitation, to the respect which is due from me for the commands of Madame d'Orleans. I have already communicated my sentiments upon that subject to M. d'Orleans. It will therefore be thought proper to send M. de Beaujollois to some distance, to free him from the habit of being directed by me, which could scarcely be accomplished at Paris, or which at least would be said to continue, and I should be reported to be the director of his education at the very time that I professed to have no concern in it. This I have communicated to M. de Beaujollois: it cost him many tears, but he has fully comprehended the delicacy that dictates it.

M. de Beaujollois has been telling me that Madame Defrois came to see him in my absence, and expressed *how much she was delighted that he was henceforth to be under the care of M. Lebrun; that the circumstance gave equal pleasure to Madame d'Orleans* . . . . .

And to me also most assuredly. For I told M. d'Orleans, who had the goodness to consult me, that he could not do better than to place M. de Beaujollois in the hands of M. Lebrun and M. Coupey, so eligible by their knowledge and their virtues, and who are beside excellent patriots and members of the club of Friends to the Constitution.

MADE.



21 May 1791.

**M**ADEMOISELLE has yet received no answer from Madame d'Orleans, which very sensibly afflicts her. She has written a second letter to-day by a messenger sent by her brothers to ask Madame's permission to come to see her at Eu.

' I have read the above article

' CHARTRES.

' MONTPENSIER.

' BEAUJOLLOIS.

' ADELA D'ORLEANS.'

---

23 May 1791.

**T**HE messenger sent to Eu is returned, and has brought a short note from Madame d'Orleans, in which she merely says that she cannot write at present, but that she will return an answer as soon as she is able. Mademoiselle has received no direct answer. Her brothers were still desirous of setting out to-morrow for Eu, and I seconded this desire; but M. d'Orleans has ordered them to wait till the promised answer arrives, as Madame in her note, which contains only three lines, does not give them leave to go, but says she will write to them more particularly upon the subject.

Mademoiselle has this day written again to Madame d'Orleans.

24 May 1791.

**M**ADAME D'ORLEANS has written a letter to her children which they received to-day, and in which she prohibits the two eldest from going to see her at Leu. They have resolved, if M. d'Orleans approve of it, to go to-morrow to la Mothe, a villa belonging to him about a league from Eu, in order to write from thence to Madame d'Orleans and persevere in soliciting permission to see her. M. de Chartres is by much the more desirous to obtain this permission, as he is upon the point of setting out for his regiment, and will be absent four months and a half, if not more. I have not seen Madame d'Orleans' letter, but I enquired respecting her health, and M. de Chartres tells me that she writes him word that she is better, having only suffered a slight indisposition: Mademoiselle adds, that in the letter she has received, it is farther said that her mother intends in a short time to go to another of the villas of M. de Penthievre.

' I have read the preceding article.

' CHARTRES.

' MONTPENSIER.

' BEAUJOLLOIS.

' ADELA D'ORLEANS.'

25 May 1791.

**M.** DE BEAUJOLLOIS expresses a regret at quitting me that gives me extreme pain. He must be sure that I partake of his affliction, for he knows how much I love him, and how happy

happy I should be were it in my power to finish his education. But I again repeat to him, that I neither can nor ought to occasion Madame d'Orleans this pain, as it is possible to avoid it. Though M. de Beaujollois is not yet eleven years of age, he has a degree of firmness that would do honour to a man, and I am certain he feels how unbecoming a man it would be to be overcome by grief. I acknowledge, dear child, that you have at this moment great reason to be unhappy: at a distance from an estimable and dear mother, unable to go to see her because she prohibits it, ignorant when she will return; in short about to quit for a long time a beloved father, sister, brothers, and a friend who has consecrated to you eight uninterrupted years of care! You must necessarily suffer; but, dear child, suffer like a man, with patience, resignation and courage. In spite of the absence we lament, I will be mindful of you every day, I will write to you incessantly, I will send you extracts of all our readings, I will not pass an hour without thinking of the beloved child who shews me so fond an attachment, and which my heart so fully returns.

---

*Tuesday, 26 May 1791.*

**M.** D'ORLEANS has consented to his two eldest sons going to La Mothe. They will write from thence to inform Madame d'Orleans, that they wish not to be importunate in their solicitations to see her, as she has given them to understand that she cannot at present receive them, from an apprehension that the

emotion it might occasion would be fatal to her health; but that they are desirous of being near her that they may receive the most certain and direct intelligence respecting her, and that she may be assured they will not present themselves before her without her express permission. As I observed yesterday, Madame d'Orleans writes them word that she has no particular disorder, but only a slight general indisposition. M. de Chartres and his brother will be accompanied by M. Pieyre; they are to set out at half after six this evening, and are to perform the journey without stopping: the distance is fifty-two leagues, so that they will travel all night. They are to return in the same expeditious manner, as the business of his regiment absolutely obliges M. de Chartres to be here on Sunday. On Monday or Tuesday it is supposed that he will depart for his regiment.

Mademoiselle and M. Beaujollois have both written this day to Madame d'Orleans.

CHARTRES.

ADELA D'ORLEANS.

MONTPENSIER.

BEAUJOLLOIS.

29 May 1791.

**M.** DE CHARTRES and M. de Montpensier returned this morning from the town of Eu. They inform me that they have seen Madame d'Orleans, and that she received them with the greatest affection and the most acute

acute sensibility. They appear to have been both very much affected with the interview.

CHARTRES.

MONT PENSIER.

*End of the Journal of Education, written for  
the Benefit of my Pupils\*.*

I SHALL now present the reader with some letters that have not been inserted in the Journal, as I wished them not to be read by my pupils. They have known nothing of the conduct of Madame d'Orleans towards me for two years past, except such things as they have themselves witnessed, and which it was impossible to conceal from them. I am now obliged, in my own vindication, to publish various particulars of which they are to this day ignorant; for I swear by every thing sacred that, to the present 29 May 1791, I have never spoken to them, directly or indirectly, of the steps that I have taken to conciliate Madame d'Orleans, or of the following letters. I have not only concealed from them these fruitless attempts, but, in order to diminish in their eyes the flagrant injustice of Madame d'Orleans respecting me, I have a thousand times repeated to them, that I accused myself of one fault, the fault of not having pursued such measures as were calculated to undeceive and reconcile her; that I should always love her because I was sure that nothing could alter the fixed sen-

\* I shall henceforth make no Journal but for Mademoiselle, she being the only one of M. d'Orleans' children in whose education I have now any concern.

iments of her heart ; but that I had a certain inflexibility of character that would not let me employ such means as might effect an accommodation ; that in short, when friendship withdrew itself from me, I could only groan in secret ; and if I did not withdraw my friendship also, the most I was able to do was to remain immovable in the place assigned me. In this manner did I extenuate in their eyes what in mine appeared inconceivable. This is the only artifice I ever employed with my pupils ; for when, in spite of her cruel prejudice against me, I extolled to them her virtue, the natural goodness of her heart, her engaging and amiable character, I only discharged a duty, I did justice to truth, I related what I had myself seen during eighteen years, and what still exists. One may irritate and torment a sensible and virtuous heart, one may fill it with unjust suspicions ; but it is impossible to harden, it is impossible to change it. To wish to alienate a mother from her children is a wicked and malicious design, and as absurd as it is wicked when that mother is Madame d'Orleans.

On the tenth of September 1790, I wrote to M. d'Orleans the following letter.

‘ The unfortunate moment which I have for more than a year foreseen, is at length arrived. I feel myself absolutely forced to resign my office, unless, which I do not expect, the reparation to which my character is entitled be, within the space of three days, granted me. You know the situation in which matters stood ; you have indeed been an ocular witness ; you are therefore competent to judge whether I have acted with mild-

ness,



' nels, good temper and moderation. At length  
 ' however I am driven to an extreme, by which  
 ' my heart is deeply wounded, but from which  
 ' I can no longer abstain. I have not menti-  
 ' oned to you that, a few days ago, Madame  
 ' d'Orleans visited her daughter in the after-  
 ' noon, a thing unusual with her; and after  
 ' two minutes conversation, told her before  
 ' Mademoiselle Rime that she wished to see  
 ' her brothers, and asked her where they  
 ' were. Mademoiselle answered, that they  
 ' were, *as was customary at that hour, with me.*  
 ' *In that case,* rejoined Madame d'Orleans, *I*  
 ' *shall not see them.* This is exactly what  
 ' passed, was said aloud to Mademoiselle be-  
 ' fore a femme de chambre, and is perfectly  
 ' unambiguous. I however determined to say  
 ' nothing to you of this, any more than of  
 ' several other things of a similar nature. What  
 ' I have now to mention is still more pointed.  
 ' You already know that Madame d'Orleans  
 ' told her children before the whole aca-  
 ' demy \*, that she should expect them to dine  
 ' with her on Sunday †. This morning how-  
 ' ever, Mademoiselle, at half after ten, the  
 ' usual hour of my waking, came to my bed-  
 ' side and embraced me, drowned in tears,  
 ' telling me that an hour and a half before  
 ' her mother had been with her, and told her,  
 ' *that she should be obliged to refuse herself their*  
 ' *company on Sunday for very cogent reasons;*

\* We called, as I have already observed, the study of painting by this name.

† As they had been accustomed to do every preceding year immediately on returning from the country; they dined regularly with Madame d'Orleans once a week, sometimes accompanied by me, but oftner without me.

' that she could not communicate to her these rea-  
 ' sons, because she had not entitled herself to her  
 ' confidence; that she hoped however they would  
 ' soon cease to exist, and she should then be ac-  
 ' quainted with the whole. These hints were  
 ' interspersed with many questions, and this  
 ' among the rest: *Is it true that you are so very*  
 ' *fond of Madame de Sillery?*—*I should be very*  
 ' *ungrateful,* replied Mademoiselle, *if I did*  
 ' *not love her from the bottom of my soul.* Ma-  
 ' dame had then a similar conversation with  
 ' M. de Chartres and his brother. The result  
 ' of this is, that your children are now per-  
 ' fectly assured that their mother detests me,  
 ' and openly disapproves the confidence you  
 ' place in me, and of consequence that the  
 ' sentiments of you and their mother are at  
 ' direct variance upon this subject. Add to  
 ' this, that they see Madame d'Orleans only  
 ' for a few minutes at a time, and that she  
 ' treats them with the utmost distance; that  
 ' they see my whole industry dedicated to  
 ' their welfare; that they think so resolute a  
 ' sacrifice entitled to the gratitude of their  
 ' mother, and that they observe me speaking  
 ' of her upon all occasions, notwithstanding  
 ' the treatment I receive, with respect for her  
 ' character and with the settled purpose of  
 ' awakening their attachment for her. They  
 ' certainly therefore will not think me to  
 ' blame in the present misunderstanding, and  
 ' it is impossible that such a difference should  
 ' not ultimately make a very undesirable im-  
 ' pression upon them\*. Under these circum-  
 ' stances

\* This letter was not intended to be perused by the chil-  
 dren; it was written expressly for M<sup>rs</sup> d'Orleans, and, desi-  
 rous

stances I cannot with honour any longer remain in my situation. I have taken therefore my irrevocable resolution, which is as follows: Do me the favour either to prevail upon Madame d'Orleans, *within three days*, to authorise me to say to her children, that I have been to the Palais Royal to demand an explanation from her, or that an eclairecissement in any other way has taken place; that I fully justified myself from the misrepresentations that were made of me, and that she has restored to me my place in her friendship; this declaration to be followed with a civil and decent intercourse, and with evening visits from her the same as formerly. Upon this condition I consent to remain; I will adopt an act of oblivion, and with the utmost frankness will make every demonstration of respect and attachment. I am indeed prepared, notwithstanding the injustice I have suffered, which has been inspired by ill-intentioned persons who have cruelly abused the easiness of her disposition, upon all occasions to do justice to her virtue and the goodness of her heart, and readily

rous of producing an adequate effect; I exaggerated my apprehensions about the consequence, or to speak more properly, I was not sufficiently mistress of myself to weigh and measure the words I employed, since in fact I could never have believed that children of right natural dispositions were capable of being undesirably impressed against their mother, because she withdrew her confidence from their preceptress. Accordingly my pupils have felt, exactly as they ought to do, a perfect submission to the will of their father, an unalterable respect and affection for Madame d'Orleans, a lively gratitude for my exertions, and a rooted contempt for the person who has so odiously abused the ascendancy she has rapidly gained over the mind of their mother.

“ excuse

‘ excuse a conduct of which I am very sure  
 ‘ Madame does not perceive the consequences.  
 ‘ In a word I conjure you to obtain what I  
 ‘ demand without delay, and, if that be im-  
 ‘ possible, to consider the present as a letter of  
 ‘ resignation. There is nothing I am not  
 ‘ ready to do for your children, and this I  
 ‘ have always shewn, except dishonouring my  
 ‘ character, a dishonour which will be the in-  
 ‘ evitable result, if things continue any longer  
 ‘ in their present situation.’

*Belle Chasse, Friday, 10 September 1790.*

IT appears from this letter what language I employed in speaking of Madame d’Orleans to M. d’Orleans, at a time too when my mind was the more irritated by a long series of ill treatment, as Madame d’Orleans had never accorded me the slightest explanation. Whatever wrongs may be imputed to a person upon whom, for a period of nineteen years, we have profusely bestowed the most affectionate demonstrations of friendship and unbounded confidence, it is at least incumbent on us to inform him minutely of the accusations we have to allege against him, and not to condemn without hearing him.—M. d’Orleans was unwilling to receive my resignation, and promised to obtain, in a few days, what I desired. During this interval, Mademoiselle, who from what she had seen had long feared that I should at last take the resolution to retire, seeing me melancholy and very much agitated, readily penetrated my design: she thought however that it was not becoming in her

her to speak to me upon the subject, and this restraint reduced her to a very deplorable state. One day in the garden at Belle Chasse she fainted; the persons who were with her came to inform me that she was totally deprived of her senses: I ran to her assistance, and I found her in the most alarming convulsions. Upon opening her eyes and perceiving me, she burst into tears; the scene will never be blotted from my memory; it brought on an explanation, in which I made a formal promise to finish her education, that is to say, never to quit her voluntarily or demand leave to resign my office. This new engagement made me more desirous than ever of the return of Madame d'Orleans' favour, having naturally an extreme aversion to complain. I had spoken very vaguely to M. d'Orleans of my situation, and with a mildness calculated to persuade him that I was not in the smallest degree actuated by angry and malevolent feelings. He replied that Madame d'Orleans was far from displaying my moderation in this respect; that her new friends had succeeded in effecting a total change in her character; but that she was absolutely incapable of alleging against me a single fact, or of justifying her sudden and violent enmity by any motive that had the least foundation in truth. He was of opinion that at bottom, their abhorrence of the new constitution was a principal cause of the aversion Madame d'Orleans' friends entertained for me; but he believed at the same time that she would never openly avow such a motive, as she knew his sentiments and mine to agree upon the subject, and she could scarcely indulge a hope that a father would consent to have



have his children educated in sentiments directly contrary to his own, contrary also to his oath, to that of the king and to the established laws. From these considerations he had no doubt that Madame d'Orleans would in time be governed by moderate and rational sentiments; but to effect this, he conceived it to be a duty he owed to her virtue and to the pure and lively affection of which she had given him so many proofs till the period of the revolution, to try every mode of indulgence, of esteem, of condescension which the most solid and tender friendship could devise, before he had recourse to authority. This conduct M. d'Orleans considered as a duty of gratitude, and he discharged it in its utmost extent. Such extreme kindness would doubtless have subdued the heart of Madame d'Orleans, had she been left to herself; but the person by whose counsels she was governed, and who is not formed either to feel or place any faith in generosity, saw nothing in this conduct but weakness and unconcern, and her audacious malice rose to a higher pitch.

In the mean time I informed M. d'Orleans of the promise I had made to Mademoiselle. I added that I was desirous of acquainting Madame d'Orleans with the circumstance, and of taking this opportunity of coming at length to an explanation with her. I therefore wrote the following letter, of which I kept a copy. I read it to M. d'Orleans, and he undertook to deliver it himself to Madame d'Orleans, to prevail on her to read it in his presence, as well as various passages in my Journal of Education, which I gave him for that purpose.

Alt



All this was faithfully executed; the reader will presently see with what success.

---

*Copy of a Letter which I wrote to Madame d'Orleans 3 October 1790, and which she read in the presence of M. d'Orleans.*

I REQUEST the favour of Madame d'Orleans to hear me without prejudice, - with that love of justice which is natural to her character, and to judge of me from facts only. I undertook, madam, the care of your children, because you desired it as ardently as M. d'Orleans. Madame must certainly remember, and I have more than a hundred and fifty of her letters which prove it, and which prove also that till the æra of the month of October last she honoured me with every mark of the most tender friendship\*. Madame must certainly remember that she was *happy* that her children were in my hands, *and grateful beyond expression* for the cares and education I bestowed upon them. I cite her own words, repeated in almost every letter; and I hesitate not to say that I merited such sentiments. It is now almost twelve years that Mademoiselle has

\* What must my pupils have thought of the treatment I received from Madame d'Orleans, when, from their earliest infancy to the period of her connection with Madame de Chatelux, they had seen her overwhelm me with the most affecting marks of kindness; when eighteen months previously to my writing this letter, they had seen me give her a ring with this devise: "Your love to me you know, but mine to you you cannot guess." If friendship can thus express itself after nine or ten years intimacy, have we not acquired the happy privilege of counting upon its solidity?

‘ been under my care: my duty obliged  
‘ me only to preside at her lessons; but I  
‘ have instructed her myself with a zeal and  
‘ perseverance which no master would have  
‘ exerted. It may be said with perfect truth  
‘ that, for her age, she is a prodigy upon  
‘ the harp, a talent which she owes solely  
‘ to me, since the valet de chambre to  
‘ whom she repeated my lessons, though he had  
‘ some knowledge of music, was wholly ig-  
‘ norant of this instrument and incapable even  
‘ of tuning it. Mademoiselle has other very  
‘ agreeable talents, and it is not I believe  
‘ possible to instance a young person, thirteen  
‘ years old, more accomplished, more amia-  
‘ ble and more interesting. With respect to  
‘ your sons, madam, I took charge of them,  
‘ as you know, solely for the pleasure of  
‘ proving to you, as well as to the Duke d’Or-  
‘ leans, an attachment that had no bounds,  
‘ refusing every species of emolument, though  
‘ my daughters were then upon my hands,  
‘ and I was by no means easy in my circum-  
‘ stances, the inheritance of Madamed’Etrées  
‘ not falling to M. Brulart till many years af-  
‘ ter this event. The education I have given  
‘ them has been universally approved and ad-  
‘ mired, and even by my enemies: you have  
‘ yourself, madam, appeared to be infinitely  
‘ satisfied. I will therefore take the liberty  
‘ of asking you how it is possible for you to  
‘ have forgotten all at once the satisfaction of  
‘ eleven years and the claims which so long a  
‘ period, such disinterestedness, so many cares  
‘ and sacrifices, and so much success in this  
‘ respect, ought to have secured me in your  
‘ heart? What have I done within the past

‘ eleven

' *eleven months* that can counterbalance in the  
' heart of a good mother these *eleven years*  
' consecrated to her children? Can you sup-  
' pose that I have been capable for an instant  
' of neglecting to inspire and strengthen in  
' the mind of your children, the love which  
' they owe you? The idea would be horrible,  
' and of consequence unworthy of a soul like  
' yours: beside, were I capable of so mon-  
' strous a proceeding, it would be no less ab-  
' surd than dishonest. What, madam, are my  
' views in educating your children? It surely  
' admits of proof that they are neither those  
' of fortune nor those of ambition. Friend-  
' ship alone was formerly my sole motive, and  
' nothing but the desire and hope of furnish-  
' ing a model of excellent education could  
' since have enabled me to persevere in so la-  
' borious an undertaking. My true interest,  
' and the only one I could possibly have, was  
' to make your children virtuous subjects;  
' and how could they become virtuous sub-  
' jects, if I did not cultivate in them with  
' extreme care every principle that they ought  
' to possess? I have at all times ardently wish-  
' ed that they should entertain a fervent af-  
' fection for you, nor has any thing been far-  
' ther from my thoughts than to make myself  
' permanently necessary to them. I told them  
' from the first and have constantly repeated  
' to them, in conversation and in writing, and  
' frequently, madam, in your presence, an idea  
' calculated to annihilate that necessity, that I  
' should certainly not pass my life with them,  
' and that as soon as their education was fi-  
' nished, I should withdraw myself from their  
' intercourse and quit Paris and the society of  
' the

the world for ever: such has been the resolution of my heart for twelve years without intermission\*. Ask yourself, madam, I entreat you, what inducement I could have to inspire them with coldness for you? That I might have a constant dominion over them?

\* Had I inculcated the idea that I was never to quit them, it would certainly have increased infinitely their attachment to me: but I wished them to love in preference to me, those to whom they owed their existence; and I have thought differently in this respect from a man who knew more of education than myself: let us hear the sentiments of J. J. Rousseau. 'Emilius ought to honour his parents, but he ought to obey no one but me. This is the first or rather the only condition I make with him. To this I should add, what indeed is only a consequence of it, that we are never to part but by mutual consent. This is an essential article, and I would even have both the governor and the pupil look upon one another as inseparable and the fortunes of each as common to both. As soon as they perceive, at however distant a period, their future separation; as soon as they foresee the moment when they are to become strangers to each other, they begin to be so immediately; each forms his separate views, and both, occupied with the prospect of what may happen after their parting, continue together against their inclinations. But when they regard themselves as bound to spend their days together, it is of importance to both to endear themselves to each other, and this idea of itself creates a reciprocal esteem. The pupil will not be ashamed to be guided in his infancy by the friend he is to accompany when grown to man's estate; and the governor cannot but interest himself in the cultivation of the plant of which he is to reap the fruit, while in adding to the merit of his pupil, he is laying up a fund by which he is to profit in his old age.'

These ideas are just; but I have not pursued them, because I did not wish to become the first object of the attachment of my pupils, because I did not wish to increase that natural regard, so strong and so affectionate, which every child well born always feels for a rational and tender preceptor who devotes all his time and cares to his education. In every thing relative to my pupils, I have ever had the same excess of delicacy.

' This

‘ This dominion is a thing altogether foreign  
‘ to my disposition, nor have I ever sought to  
‘ exert it even over my own children: it would  
‘ require a watchfulness, an assiduity, a plia-  
‘ bleness of disposition very uncengential to my  
‘ feelings, and which I could never exert.—  
‘ With these sentiments, with my unalterable  
‘ resolution to retire into privacy, as soon as  
‘ I had recovered my liberty, it is not possible  
‘ that I should have entertained another so  
‘ contradictory as that of dictating and guid-  
‘ ing their actions. But had it even been my  
‘ wish to remain with them, and to preserve  
‘ an ascendancy over their minds, why should  
‘ it be necessary for me to make them unna-  
‘ tural and wicked sons? why corrupt them in  
‘ order to establish my empire over their un-  
‘ derstandings, and their hearts, when I was  
‘ more sure of succeeding by the method which  
‘ I pursued without this design, by rendering  
‘ them perfectly honest, virtuous and good?  
‘ Madame d’Orleans may recollect that when  
‘ I enjoyed the happiness of seeing and con-  
‘ versing with her, I conjured her to take some  
‘ share in the education of her daughter, be-  
‘ cause I perceived that Mademoiselle’s attach-  
‘ ment to me was chiefly inspired by her lively  
‘ gratitude for the cares I bestowed upon her  
‘ and the lessons I gave her. I had reflected  
‘ upon this, and of consequence I proposed,  
‘ about a year since, a plan to Madame, which  
‘ would have wrought in her daughter the  
‘ same sentiments towards her mother as she  
‘ felt in this respect towards me. This pro-  
‘ posal, madam, on my part, incontestably  
‘ proves how desirous I was of embracing every  
‘ possible means of uniting you more closely

‘ to



‘ to Mademoiselle. But, I thank God, I have  
‘ a proof still stronger than these facts, of my  
‘ unceasing desire to cultivate in my pupils an  
‘ affection for their mother, a proof that  
‘ amounts to mathematical demonstration: it  
‘ is, madam, the Journal I have written for  
‘ your children, and which has been read by  
‘ them every day. How happy should I have  
‘ been had you read it also! I should then  
‘ never have lost the felicity of being loved by  
‘ you. One of the most painful mortifications  
‘ you ever occasioned me was the refusing one  
‘ day in the presence of your daughter, to  
‘ comply with my request that you would per-  
‘ use it. Condescend, madam, to read it now;  
‘ I send it you for that purpose: you will find  
‘ it pervaded with the most earnest wish that  
‘ you should be adored by your children; you  
‘ will find that I have spoken to them conti-  
‘ nually *of your affection for them, of your hea-*  
‘ *venly virtues, of the love and boundless confi-*  
‘ *dence they owe you.* Such has constantly been  
‘ the language I have employed, and notwith-  
‘ standing the singular treatment I have lately  
‘ received, this language has suffered no  
‘ change. Madame will also see that I have  
‘ in like manner not neglected to cultivate  
‘ in them the tender sentiments they owe to  
‘ M. de Penthièvre, and even those which are  
‘ due to other persons towards whom I have a  
‘ right to feel something very different from  
‘ esteem, because they have been guilty of the  
‘ blackest ingratitude, as for instance Madame  
‘ Desrois. But I spoke to the children not  
‘ from my private sentiments, but from a sense  
‘ of what I thought was incumbent on them,  
‘ having but one sole end in view, that of ren-  
‘ dering



dering them virtuous. I intreat you, madam, to place yourself for a moment in my situation: after twelve years labour, after so many sacrifices, and such unexampled cares, what is my reward? I have doubtless one that is very great; a conscience without reproach, my success in forming the minds of my pupils, their lively gratitude, that of the Duke d'Orleans and universal approbation: but can I be contented when I am deprived of one satisfaction for which no other can compensate, the satisfaction of having my conduct approved and esteemed by you?—What do I say! You openly express before your children your disapprobation of my conduct, and thus afford them an undoubted proof of what is of all things most dangerous and fatal to persons of their age, that their father and mother are, relatively to them, no longer of the same opinion, that they no longer act in concert, that the one approves what the other avowedly dislikes. In short, madam, they see that the person who has devoted eleven years to their service, and who, till the month of October 1790, was honoured with your confidence and friendship, is suddenly become an object of disgrace in your eyes. They know to what a degree I have endeavoured to cherish in them the affection they owe you, and they perceive that you are no longer willing to receive them at your house, because they are under my superintendence. Every person connected with their education has witnessed that, within six months particularly, you have been averse to seeing me. Such conduct, so directly opposite also to that of M. d'Or-

VOL. I. K leans,

leans, is naturally calculated to blacken me in the eyes of those who are spectators of it, for they must suppose that Madame would not thus treat an old friend and the governess of her children, if she had not the most indisputable and heinous wrongs to alledge against her; particularly when they see me endure such treatment patiently and without resigning my office. Any other in my place would have resigned eight months ago; I was warmly urged to it by M. de Sillery: our situation and circumstances were such that my liberty would have been exceedingly dear to me; but I was not disposed, and I conceived that I ought not to give in my resignation at a time when the Duke d'Orleans suffered persecution, and the Palais Royal lost every day its lustre: the injustice and calumny which the Duke experienced tied closer the bands which united me to him and to his house; my retreat would have been regarded as dastardly and dishonourable: thus I considered it as my duty to bear every thing, and to remain in my place; and I did so. Beside, I always flattered myself that Madame would deign at last either to inform me of the injuries I had done her, and which could only be imaginary, or that she would do me justice. I hoped that the return of M. d'Orleans would disperse these grievous clouds. I yielded to the first impulse of my heart by seeing Madame the day of his arrival; in presenting myself I took the liberty to embrace her; she received me with great tenderness, I saw her tears flow, I mingled mine, my heart desired no other explanation, and I considered every thing

' as at an end. I continued for several days in  
 ' this sweet illusion; Madame treated me with  
 ' infinitely less indifference; she came even  
 ' twice into my apartment: and behold, all at  
 ' once, without any new event, without any  
 ' apparent cause, she breaks with me, and  
 ' that in the most public manner. It was im-  
 ' possible for me to be mistaken, and I was at  
 ' length convinced that Madame was resolved  
 ' to force me to give in my resignation. After  
 ' many struggles with myself, after the most  
 ' inexpressible and heart-felt anguish, I sud-  
 ' denly resolved to comply with her design, as  
 ' soon as the affair of the calumnious prose-  
 ' cution against M. d'Orleans should be finish-  
 ' ed. I was not unaware, nor did I recollect  
 ' without much distress, the painful effect our  
 ' separation would produce upon your chil-  
 ' dren, and above all upon Mademoiselle; but  
 ' I adhered to this mode of demonstrating my  
 ' respect for your inclinations, and accordingly  
 ' announced it to the Duke d'Orleans, who by  
 ' the sorrow he expressed augmented that  
 ' which I felt. Meanwhile, Mademoiselle,  
 ' who had long been anxious and restless about  
 ' my situation, penetrated, or at least guessed  
 ' at my design from its effect upon my car-  
 ' riage, for I did not utter a word to her upon  
 ' the subject. She concealed her suspicions  
 ' from me as long as she could: but this even-  
 ' ing, being with Mademoiselle Rime in the  
 ' garden, she was taken ill and hastily brought  
 ' into the saloon. I was informed of it, and  
 ' ran to her assistance; I found her in a violent  
 ' paroxysm of convulsions and sighs, as if her  
 ' heart were breaking. She told me *that she*  
 ' *was struck with despair and should certainly*  
 ' die.

die. These were her own words. I then sent away her women, and she opened to me the state of her mind with an impetuosity of grief and despair, of which I never saw an example, particularly in a person of her age. I could only think at the moment of calming her feelings and reviving her hopes. I repeated to her that the clouds which disquieted her would shortly be dissipated; that she had the tenderest and most virtuous of mothers, and the best of fathers; that she ought to place in them the most unlimited confidence and all her hopes of happiness, and especially to acquiesce with entire submission in whatever their affection should determine respecting her; that if at present they appeared to be of contrary opinions, it was only a momentary opposition, founded upon some misunderstanding; that their regard for their dear amiable child should dispel all her apprehensions; and that as to myself, I promised never to prefer my liberty to the happiness of finishing her education, and never to give in my resignation. It was thus I established a calm in the most sensible and grateful heart that nature ever formed. These details, which I immediately communicated to the Duke d'Orleans, increased, if possible, his extreme affection for this adorable child. What may not he, as well as you, madam, expect from a soul like this! It is then absolutely impossible that I can resign my situation, since in the present state of things, I am certain that the delicate constitution of Mademoiselle would be unable to withstand the mortification of such an event. I do not say

this

‘ this from a belief that she will never bear  
‘ to be separated from me ; such conduct  
‘ would be weak and absurd : she knows per-  
‘ fectly well, from my having a thousand times  
‘ repeated it to her, that the moment she shall  
‘ cease to stand in need of my cares, I shall  
‘ quit for ever the society of the world, an  
‘ event that in three or four years at latest will  
‘ certainly take place. But how different,  
‘ madam, must be her feelings, instead of re-  
‘ maining with me till her education should be  
‘ finished ; instead of seeing me, joyful in the  
‘ completion of my work, resign her into your  
‘ arms and receive your applause for all I had  
‘ done both for her and for you ; to see me on  
‘ the contrary torn from her in the midst of my  
‘ plans, and obliged to depart loaded with  
‘ the most conspicuous marks of your dissa-  
‘ tisfaction and disgrace ? Consider also that  
‘ Mademoiselle is now in her fourteenth year,  
‘ that she is entering upon a period of life  
‘ very dangerous to young persons, and the  
‘ more so from her extreme delicacy and in-  
‘ comparable feeling ; and that violent shocks  
‘ and uneasiness of mind are likely to prove  
‘ exceedingly pernicious. Permit me then,  
‘ madam, to continue my cares till she shall  
‘ be in every respect formed, and there shall  
‘ be nothing to apprehend for her health. I  
‘ have in vain sought to conjecture why you  
‘ are desirous of tearing from me the child  
‘ that you entrusted to me with so much joy.  
‘ Till the month of October last, you ap-  
‘ peared to be charmed with the education I  
‘ gave her ; and I have since that period  
‘ changed neither my plan nor my conduct ;  
‘ beside, Madame has ceased to visit me, or



' to concern herself about the instruction of  
 ' her daughter, and, unfortunately for me,  
 ' she is therefore unable to judge of it. Has  
 ' any one aspersed or caluminated me in this  
 ' respect? But who can have done this? The  
 ' persons by whom Madame is surrounded  
 ' never come near me, and are of course in-  
 ' competent judges. I am told that Madame  
 ' de Chatelux is my enemy, and that she rails  
 ' at me in a most unmerciful manner. But  
 ' why? I have rendered her various services;  
 ' I have ten of her letters, and an equal num-  
 ' ber of her husband's, full of expressions of  
 ' *the tender gratitude, of the eternal gratitude*  
 ' they owe me, and which she promises *all her*  
 ' *life to preserve*\*. I have served her, madam,  
 ' with

\* My niece has in her possession many letters of Madame  
 de Chatelux in which the same expressions and protestations  
 are repeated: but she had then need of my assistance. I  
 have been greatly blamed by the world for serving with so  
 much zeal a person who was unknown to me, and whose  
 reputation made it undesirable that she should be situated in  
 the Palais Royal. The fact was this: I had been the friend  
 of the Marquis de Chatelux; he quarrelled with me: in  
 the mean time his injustice was not of a nature to diminish  
 the esteem due to his character. We were upon ill terms  
 on my arrival at Spa; but he knew me sufficiently to be  
 sure that I should not be insensible to the pleasure of render-  
 ing an important service to a person whom I had once  
 loved, though I had just cause of complaint against him.  
 He sought me; confided to me the secret of his heart,  
 assured me that the object of his attachment was in all respects  
 worthy of his choice, and conjured me to obtain for her a  
 place in the Palais Royal, as he was unable from the nar-  
 rowness of his fortune to make a suitable provision for her  
 after his death. He added, that if I could not obtain this  
 favour, he should nevertheless marry her, but that anxiety  
 for the future would in that case poison all the happiness of  
 his life. This mark of confidence touched my heart, and  
 was flattering also, I confess, to my vanity: I wished to

show

show my  
 generous  
 never has  
 prudence.



‘ with you ; I have served her with the Duke  
‘ d’Orleans : I have made myself many ene-  
‘ mies by the warmth with which I defended  
‘ her immediatly upon her marriage ; I intro-  
‘ duced her to Madame Necker, who was  
‘ very much prejudiced against her, as if she  
‘ had been my dearest friend and relative ; I  
‘ introduced her to my aunt ; I introduced  
‘ her to my daughter ; contrary to my dispo-  
‘ sition, I accompanied her in every visit in  
‘ which I could be at all useful to her ; not-  
‘ withstanding my occupations, I undertook  
‘ all her commissions and made all her pur-  
‘ chases relative to her marriage ; I engaged  
‘ my brother to prevail on M. d’Orleans to  
‘ lend her husband what money he wanted for  
‘ the arrangement of his affairs ; I offered her  
‘ an apartment of which I had the disposal ;  
‘ in short, I was charmed when I saw Madame  
‘ d’Orleans conceive a real friendship for her ;  
‘ and Madame knows that I have never spo-  
‘ ken of her but in terms of encomium.  
‘ These are indisputable facts, and yet Ma-  
‘ dame de Chatelux is desirous of ruining me  
‘ in your opinion : but such are the rectitude  
‘ and generosity of your soul, that I dare  
‘ believe a moment’s reflection sufficient to  
‘ convince you, that if Madame de Chatelux  
‘ hates and asperges me, she is ungrateful and  
‘ unjust ; and that, since she never sees me,  
‘ and is ignorant of all my proceedings, the  
‘ evil she speaks of me can have no weight

shew myself deserving of it. I thought I was doing a  
generous action, but I did a very inconsiderate one, and  
never has a good heart suffered more vexation for its im-  
prudence.

‘ with you. Madame has had the goodness  
‘ a thousand times to repeat to me, that I  
‘ had *the best heart in the world*, that I was *in-*  
‘ *capable of the least degree of animosity*, and I  
‘ may say with confidence that nothing can be  
‘ more true. Try me, madam; insist upon  
‘ my pardoning Madame de Chatelux the in-  
‘ jury she has done me: it shall cost me no  
‘ effort; I will consent; and having made  
‘ this promise, you may depend upon my ob-  
‘ serving it faithfully; I will from my inmost  
‘ soul bury every thing in oblivion. Is there  
‘ any thing else that Madame would desire?  
‘ Inform me of your wishes; to continue with  
‘ Mademoiselle and to regain your friendship,  
‘ there is nothing which I should find it im-  
‘ possible to do. Would you wish Mademoi-  
‘ selle to reside in the same house with you?  
‘ Madame has never signified such a desire;  
‘ on the contrary she has always appeared to  
‘ feel that the distractions unavoidable at the  
‘ Palais Royal would be extremely injurious  
‘ to her daughter’s education, and that the  
‘ beautiful garden and excellent air of Belle  
‘ Chasse were indispensably necessary to her  
‘ health: but if Madame has changed her  
‘ opinion, I comply without hesitation. I will  
‘ go to the Palais Royal; my lodging need  
‘ not incommode you; I will be contented  
‘ for myself with a single chamber, with a  
‘ closet, with any arrangement you please.  
‘ Condescend then, madam, to explain your-  
‘ self; have the goodness to reflect that things  
‘ cannot possibly continue as they are at pre-  
‘ sent; condescend to do me the justice which  
‘ I dare affirm to be due to my attachment  
‘ and the disinterestedness of my cares. My  
‘ affection

‘affection for Mademoiselle makes it impossi-  
‘ble for me voluntarily to offer my resigna-  
‘tion; it must be demanded of me: but as I  
‘have demonstrated the purity of my conduct  
‘by facts and the most positive evidence, and  
‘as it is not possible for a single reproach  
‘founded in truth to be alleged against me  
‘relative to the education of my pupils, the  
‘knowledge I have of the character, the  
‘principles and the integrity of Madame,  
‘gives me the certainty that, after this state-  
‘ment, she will restore to me all my happi-  
‘ness, by restoring to me her favour and  
‘friendship. Ah! madam! listen only to the  
‘dictates of your heart, be guided by your  
‘own knowledge and experience, and I shall  
‘from this very evening be perfectly happy.  
‘After reading this letter, your first impulse  
‘would be that of justice and goodness; it  
‘would direct you to Belle Chasse; you  
‘would hasten to relieve and console a heart  
‘that feels towards you the utmost esteem and  
‘attachment; you would hasten to embrace  
‘in your arms a daughter who, though so  
‘young, discovers already a soul of strong  
‘sensibility and gratitude, and a character in  
‘the highest degree engaging and estimable;  
‘a daughter who, by her virtues and her  
‘affection, will constitute the charm and feli-  
‘city of your life! How many things could  
‘I still say! In the name of Heaven, in the  
‘name of your daughter, madam, I conjure  
‘you to accompany M. d’Orleans hither;  
‘come and hear what I have to say; come  
‘and restore to me the claims which I have  
‘never forfeited; I will receive this just re-  
‘turn of your goodness with the gratitude,  
‘joy

‘ joy and effusion of soul which the most generous pardon can inspire.’

---

**M.** D'ORLEANS, as I have already observed, carried this letter, together with my Journal, to Madame. She read the letter and appeared to be in no degree moved by it; of the Journal she pertinaciously refused to read a single article. In the mean time, as it was not possible for her to assign a reason, and as she was warmly urged by M. d'Orleans, who wished for an answer before she had an opportunity of consulting Madame de Chatelux, she formally promised as follows: that she would in future treat me in a becoming manner, would come sometimes to see me, would receive her children at dinner every Sunday, and would wish me to accompany them as usual whenever I could make it convenient; that of consequence she authorised me to tell them that we had had an explanation, with which she was perfectly satisfied: in short, she agreed to come to Belle Chasse the next morning, upon condition that not a syllable should be mentioned of our difference, and that no sort of eclairsissement should take place on one side or the other. M. d'Orleans accepted this treaty in my name, which I ratified. The next day Madame came as she had promised, accompanied by M. d'Orleans; she did me the honour to embrace me: we talked of indifferent subjects, and after a quarter of an hour she went into an adjoining apartment to her children. She told them that she had spoken to me, that she was satisfied, and that now they

they might come as usual to see her, attended by me. All this (as has been seen) I wrote in my Journal. On the following Sunday I dined with all my pupils at the Palais Royal; M. d'Orleans dined there also, and Madame treated me with the utmost propriety. The next day I received from her a note of which the following is a copy.

'I request Madame de Sillery to make such  
'arrangements as may leave my daughter at  
'leisure three times a week, Tuesdays, Thurs-  
'days and Saturdays, from twelve to a quar-  
'ter after one. I shall call and take up all  
'my children every Sunday at three, and  
'bring them back at six, when Madame de  
'Sillery does not come with them.'

If I had had any thing that feared disclosure, I should have conceived some displeasure at these *têtes à têtes* three times a week between Madame d'Orleans and a child of thirteen years old, from whom it was so easy to have drawn the truth by caresses, cross questions and maternal authority. I conceived no displeasure at this intercourse; it had ever been the object of my wish, and I instantly proposed, as has appeared in the Journal, farther methods for procuring Madame d'Orleans the pleasure of passing more time alone with her daughter. She was surprised and affected at this procedure, and I saw clearly that my enemies had been *mal adroit* enough to predict that I should act differently. Upon this occasion she wrote me the following letter, which; like all the rest, has been carefully preserved:

'I thank you, madam, for having pointed  
'out to me a method for prolonging and ren-  
'dering frequent my intercourse with my  
'children.



‘ children. I should be sorry to interrupt the  
‘ course my daughter is pursuing for her in-  
‘ struction, though you tell me that what re-  
‘ mains of these excursions is of little im-  
‘ portance. On the days therefore that my  
‘ sons shall visit any cabinet, &c. I will take  
‘ my daughter thither at the same hour as  
‘ often as possible. Being informed however  
‘ of their intention only the evening before,  
‘ it may sometimes happen that I shall have a  
‘ previous engagement; I therefore willingly  
‘ accept your offer of giving me a proper no-  
‘ tice, and in that case the first time that I take  
‘ out my daughter I will not fail to conduct  
‘ her to the place of appointment.”

On the eleventh of October I wrote the following letter to Madame d’Orleans, of which M. de Chartres had not the least knowledge.

‘ This letter, madam, is written for you  
‘ alone and relates only to M. de Chartres.

‘ There was a time, madam, and that at no  
‘ great distance, when I could speak and open  
‘ my heart to you respecting every thing which  
‘ I thought interesting to you. At present you  
‘ are not disposed to hear me; but my con-  
‘ science and the dearest interest oblige me to  
‘ request one thing of you which is of much  
‘ greater importance to yourself than to me.  
‘ M. de Chartres is arrived at the age of se-  
‘ venteen years, and is his own master. He  
‘ has the liberty of going wherever he pleases  
‘ and unaccompanied by any one. He is so  
‘ well born, has imbibed such excellent prin-  
‘ ciples and has so good a heart, that he will  
‘ be in much less danger from this liberty  
‘ than almost any other person; but still there  
‘ will be some danger. He feels the most  
‘ ardent



ardent desire of contributing to your happiness by his affection and conduct; and I could therefore wish that at this critical period you would without delay have a conversation with him in which you might tell him, *that he can only make you happy by conducting himself so as to merit no reproach; that you hope he will preserve his religious principles; that should he ever abandon them, or suffer the purity of his manners to degenerate, it would occasion you the severest affliction, and that on the contrary, should he maintain an immaculate character and persevere in the eternal principles of virtue, he would render you the happiest of mothers, and you would love him with the most passionate fondness.*

I am certain that this conversation from your mouth would strengthen and permanently fix him in his excellent resolutions. Eighteen months ago I had hoped that, at the period which is now arrived, I should have had the felicity, my task being over, of delivering him myself into your hands, and of instructing you in every particular that could lead you to a knowledge of his character and give you immediately that ascendancy over him, which I possess myself, and which can only be acquired by a perfect acquaintance with his virtues and defects, and the turn of his mind; an ascendancy that in you, madam, would be still more powerful, as it would be aided by the tender sentiments of nature which he possesses in a most eminent degree, and which are equally conspicuous in all your children. He is so happily disposed by nature, and, I may add, by my cares, to love you, that you will certainly

‘tainly gain this ascendancy the moment you  
‘shall have acquired the knowledge of him  
‘that is necessary. Had you been desirous of  
‘hearing the only person who can perfectly  
‘know him, you would already in this point  
‘have been as well informed as myself, and  
‘it is of importance to him that the empire  
‘I recommend to you should be speedily esta-  
‘blished: the year which he is commencing  
‘is the most dangerous of his life; I cannot  
‘watch over him in his intercourse with the  
‘world; it is the business of his virtuous and  
‘sensible mother; she can preserve him from  
‘every snare, from every seduction, if she  
‘enter upon it in a spirit suitable to his cha-  
‘racter. I ask not, madam, an interview for  
‘this purpose, though one conversation would  
‘convey more information than twenty letters,  
‘particularly as there are various minute cir-  
‘cumstances which cannot be written, and  
‘which at the same time it is desirable that a  
‘mother like you should not be ignorant of:  
‘but if this letter do not displease you, and  
‘you wish me to write every thing that I con-  
‘ceive to be of importance respecting his  
‘character, and the mode of treating him  
‘most likely to be successful, I will do it with  
‘that truth and zeal which ever have and ever  
‘will characterise me when the welfare of  
‘your children is the question. I shall wait,  
‘madam, your answer; but I conjure you  
‘beforehand not to confide to any person the  
‘circumstances I may communicate; you will  
‘readily feel that in this point it is you alone  
‘who ought to be informed, to judge and to  
‘act.’

*Postscript.*

*Postscript. Monday, 11 October 1790.*

**M**ADEMOISELLE has told me that she delivered my message to Madame upon the subject of M. de Beaujollois, and that Madame replied that she would superintend his religious instruction with extreme pleasure. You are an excellent mother, and be assured that you will one day be the most enviable of mothers. Mademoiselle is in ecstacy at the kindness with which you treat her; may you be mutually happy in each other to the degree that I wish, my own felicity will in that case be complete and my justification the most satisfactory that my heart can desire. Permit me to add a single word in relation to Mademoiselle: one of the things most agreeable to her, and that most strongly excites her gratitude, is familiarity in personal intercourse. When she is alone with Madame, I should be glad that Madame would enjoin her to address her with the little epithets of endearment, and even with the pronouns thee and thou. These circumstances may appear trifling, but their consequences are important; they produce a freedom of manner and a heartfelt affection which without them would not be created.

It appears from this letter, as well as from my Journal, that I had prevailed upon Madame d'Orleans to preside in the religious instruction of M. de Beaujollois which was held three times a week at the Palais Royal, and to which I could not attend myself on account of my occupations with the other children. I had  
also

also prevailed on her to read the morning Journal of M. de Beaujollois, made by his first valet de chambre, a man who has received a good education and possesses considerable merit. Madame d'Orleans, averse to reading my Journal, appeared to be highly delighted with this proposal, and from that moment the book was taken to her every morning before it was brought to me. These facts are mentioned in the Journal itself by M. Barrois, the person by whom it was written. This Journal has been transmitted to me, and I preserve it as a valuable deposit; it is very minute and regular, not a single day being omitted, is all in the hand-writing of M. Barrois, and consists of many volumes. It also appears from this Journal that from last November to the beginning of April of the present year, all the studies of M. de Beaujollois have been deranged or interrupted by the orders of Madame d'Orleans. He dined with her every Sunday, and did not return till half after six or seven in the evening: he visited her once a fortnight with Mademoiselle on the day that I did not dine at Belle Chasse; and, under pretence of sitting for his portrait, Madame d'Orleans sent for him regularly every morning and detained him an hour and a half during a period of four months: add to this an hour and a half every evening, in consequence of which he did not go to bed till eleven, nor rise till late the next morning. These facts, as I have said, are attested not only by my Journal, but by those of M. Barrois and M. Lebrun. I could not observe without mortification this total derangement of the studies of so delightful a child, who affords every demon-

demonstration of rising genius and brilliant understanding; but I had long been accustomed to suffer in silence, and I therefore did not mention the subject so much as to M. d'Orleans. Previously indeed to these ultimate mortifications, I had a moment of expectation and joy; my letter of 11 October appeared to make a favourable impression upon Madame d'Orleans; she visited me the next day, and then, for the first time after a long interval, we had some private conversation. She spoke of my last letter and of M. de Chartres with the feelings of a tender mother, thanked me for the little counsels I gave her, and assured me that she would follow them; in short, I found her just what she is by nature and what she will ever be when her own heart is her guide, a model of goodness, of tenderness and sensibility. On taking leave of me she appeared to be moved, but she doubtless confided to the persons about her the impression which this conversation and my last letter wrought on her soul, and I soon perceived the cruel effects of the advice they gave her. Every thing went on smoothly till the twentieth of October; Madame d'Orleans came regularly three mornings in the week, to take out Mademoiselle; kept her for an hour and a quarter or an hour and a half, passed all this time alone with her, and overwhelmed her with caresses and the most sensible demonstrations of affection; but all at once these *têtes à têtes* ceased: Madame de Chatelux in particular, or some other persons, always accompanied Madame d'Orleans, and her daughter had no longer the happiness of being alone with her. Three weeks had elapsed from the  
fourth.



fourth of October without my dining at the Palais Royal; but at the expiration of this period I requested Mademoiselle to inform Madame d'Orleans that I would do myself the honour of conducting the children thither the next day. Madame simply answered, that, in that case, as her daughter would be accompanied by me, she should not come for her as usual. The next day, the day that we were to dine with Madame d'Orleans, she sent at two o'clock in the afternoon to inform me, that she should not dine at home, something having happened to prevent her. I had no suspicion of the truth of this. M. d'Orleans was in the country: upon his return he told me, with great emotion and discontent, that he found Madame d'Orleans more exasperated against me than ever, though she could assign no reason, and that she had formed a resolution to receive me no more at her house. This proceeding was the more unaccountable as, upon our reconciliation, 4 October, she had promised to receive me at dinner whenever it should be agreeable to me to accompany her children, and had beside expressed, in unequivocal terms, in a note which I have cited, that she should call at Belle Chasse and take the children with her every Sunday *when Madame de Sillery does not come with them*. What had I done since the period of this promise? Every particular of my conduct has been seen. What excuse had Madame d'Orleans to allege for such a breach of her engagements? None, *unless an invincible repugnance to the seeing me*. M. d'Orleans again upon this occasion had recourse to entreaties and representations, but they were equally ineffectual. The following Sunday



Sunday I permitted my pupils to go without me to the Palais Royal, and I have never since entered its doors. The ill treatment I received from Madame d'Orleans increased every day: M. d'Orleans gave a dinner to his children at Mousseaux; Madame would not come because I was there. She came regularly with two or three other persons in her carriage to take out Mademoiselle, and, exclusive of these parties, Mademoiselle saw no one but me. Mademoiselle gave in the winter, not balls, her apartments were not sufficiently spacious, but refreshments and a dance at four different times. M. d'Orleans was present at all of them; but Madame, in spite of the entreaties of her children, did not once make her appearance. In a word, the marks of her hatred became so conspicuous and so extravagant that M. d'Orleans, after having endured and tolerated this strange injustice with uniform patience and moderation for so long a period, resolved at last to put an end to it. He had an interview with her one morning, in which he told her that he insisted upon her granting, what she had hitherto refused to his entreaty, a *direct and circumstantial explanation* with me, and that on the day following. Madame d'Orleans, after many objections, consented, and gave her formal promise that the explanation should take place. She came to me the next morning at nine, and this interview seemed to promise every thing I could desire. I believed that, as she consented to explain herself and hear my expostulation, nothing would be more easy than to put an end to our misunderstanding, or at least to make her feel the dangerous consequences of the

the

the plan of conduct that was recommended to her. It was my intention to have thus addressed her: ‘ If it be true that you cannot surmount the prejudices you have imbibed against me; if it be true that the undeniable proofs of the rectitude of my conduct fail to make an impression on you, let us adopt, calmly and prudently, such rational means as will effect our purpose, not perhaps so speedily as you may wish, but in a manner more decent and becoming both for you and for me. I have promised Mademoiselle not to give in my resignation; I will not therefore do it. You cannot demand it of me, because M. d’Orleans is master of his children, because you will thus act contrary to his will, and of consequence contrary to your duty. Madame de Chatelux, acquainted only with the customs of Liege, perfectly ignorant of ours, and who supposes money to be the omnipotent arbiter of every thing, may have told you that you have the same right to dismiss me as to discharge a *femme de chambre*, and that by the offer of a *pension* I should be perfectly reconciled. But you, madam, who have so noble and delicate a soul; you who so well understand mine, in this respect at least; who know that I have never wished to accept from you, either for myself or my daughters, I will not say a kindness, but any thing that can be called a *present*; who know also that I undertook the education of your three sons upon the express condition that I was never to receive for it any emolument whatever; you will not think yourself intitled to speak and act in this manner.

In.

‘ In short if your heart is for ever shut against  
‘ me, if the interest of your children’s educa-  
‘ tion, their attachment to me, and the desires  
‘ of M. d’Orleans, are insufficient to counter-  
‘ balance your prejudices, I wish not to re-  
‘ tain my situation in defiance of your will;  
‘ but enable me, madam, to retire without  
‘ noise or unhappy dissension, and in a man-  
‘ ner that your children may not be too vio-  
‘ lently affected. For this purpose it is neces-  
‘ sary, instead of opposing the desires of M.  
‘ d’Orleans, to appear to be conformable to  
‘ them and reconciled with me. I ask not  
‘ those marks of intimacy which subsisted two  
‘ years ago, but treat me with the respect due  
‘ to a person who has devoted twelve years of  
‘ her life to your children, and appear neither  
‘ to hate nor to avoid me. Speak of me to  
‘ your children without animosity; praise them  
‘ for the gratitude they evince towards me;  
‘ at the same time give them your confidence;  
‘ see them frequently alone; question them  
‘ with an air of interest respecting their sen-  
‘ timents, their studies, and their occupations;  
‘ this conduct persisted in for the space of five  
‘ or six months, will establish between them  
‘ and you that ease, that delightful familiarity,  
‘ which can alone be productive of true  
‘ friendship. By condescending to follow this  
‘ advice, you will enable me during the ap-  
‘ proaching winter honourably to retire: you  
‘ may then say to Mademoiselle that as, by  
‘ her own assiduity and my cares, her educa-  
‘ tion is almost perfectly completed, you wish  
‘ for the happiness of her residing with you.  
‘ In this state of things, she will quit me  
‘ without despair, and will rejoice to find her-  
‘ self

‘ self under the sole authority of her affectionate and tender mother. Seeing me treated by you with decorum, she will not regard the termination of my cares as the result of persecution, nor our separation as eternal; her tears will flow without bitterness, and the attentions of a fond mother will soon dry up their source.’

Such were the sentiments I intended to express, at the same time offering to enter into any engagements upon this head that could best ensure my sincerity. It was for this reason that I confined myself to the demand of six or seven months delay, suggesting at the same time means for removing the difficulty that accrued from my promise to Mademoiselle, and for conforming myself to all those objects that could be interesting to Madame d’Orleans. I was ruminating upon this plan, when my door opened and Madame appeared. I had hardly cast my eyes upon her before a part of my hopes vanished. She entered briskly, threw herself in a chair, bid me be silent, and then drew from her pocket a paper, remarking in the most imperious way that she would let me into her intentions respecting me. She then read with an elevated voice and extreme volubility this paper, the contents of which were of the strangest sort. It imported that *in consideration of the difference of our opinions*, I had no other party to take, *in civility or decency, than that of immediately withdrawing myself*; that if I consented to this, *she would suffer the affair to be quietly blown over, would in conversation with her friends impute my retreat to any cause I thought proper to assign, and would make any provision for the two young persons*

sons under my care that I should myself fix upon ; but this was upon condition that, while I resigned immediately, I should take all necessary precautions to prevent a too deep impression upon Mademoiselle : this might easily be done by saying, that I was going to England to drink the waters for the recovery of my health, a journey that had actually taken place seven years before, and would therefore excite no suspicions in Mademoiselle \* : but if I refused these terms, she should see with the extremest mortification her children in my care, and I might therefore count upon the most open rupture, and a determination on her part never to see me again as long as she lived.

Such was the written harangue of Madame d'Orleans which I have faithfully reported, and this is what she called an explanation. As soon as the excess of my astonishment would permit me to speak, I replied that, after the positive declaration I had heard, *there was no other conduct for me to pursue but that of retiring* ; not that I supposed Madame d'Orleans to have the right of compelling me to it, not that I was intimidated by her anger which was unjust, or by her menaces which I disregarded ; but because the authority of a mother, though restricted by the laws, was in my eyes sacred. That as to her offers, a moment's reflection must be sufficient to convince her that I could only despise them ; that I could make a sacrifice, but not a bargain. That as

\* At the time of this little excursion to England, the only one I ever made without my pupils, Mademoiselle was seven years old ; I then possessed all the confidence of Madame d'Orleans, and I was absent only five weeks.

to what the world would say, I had but one wish: that the exact truth might be known. I added that for the rest my respect for Madame d'Orleans and my knowledge of her character and her delicacy, would not permit me to attribute to her the strange production she had read to me, the style, the reasonings and the sentiments of which were so little worthy of her\*. I concluded with assuring her that I would quit Belle Chasse as soon as Mademoiselle had performed her Easter devotions, as I otherwise feared that the grief which my departure might occasion her, would deprive her of the frame of mind requisite to the right discharge of this duty. In fine I promised, not that I would tell Mademoiselle that I quitted her in order to go to the *Bristol waters*, an artifice that would not have deceived her for a moment; but I promised to conceal from her my misfortune and hers, to depart secretly, and to take every possible precaution to soften the bitterness of this cruel separation.—In the mean time M. d'Orleans waited the return of Madame at the Palais Royal. He had no doubt, from the promise she had given him, that she would come to an explanation with me; and his astonishment was equal to mine, when she informed him of the truth, and shewed him the paper which she had read and which she refused to leave with me. Such a step as this, taken without the privity of a

\* No one acquainted with the simple and natural mode of writing which characterised Madame d'Orleans for twenty years, will accuse her of having dictated the majority of those productions which she has condescended to honour with her signature for two years past.

husband



husband and a father, was necessarily calculated to surprise him, and the strange manner in which the paper was drawn up did not diminish his surprise. Add to this, that such a mode of *reading* instead of *speaking* in a tête-à-tête, is in itself sufficiently extraordinary. The grief of M. d'Orleans would, if that had been possible, have increased mine, when he found me irrevocably determined to depart 26 April, as I had told Madame d'Orleans I would do, unless she should herself desire a longer delay, of which I had no hopes. M. d'Orleans flattered himself that he could induce her to this measure by representing to her, that hitherto she had had the greatest influence in the education of her children; but that if I quitted them, this influence would entirely cease, since by forcing me to retire she openly declared to them and to the public desires and opinions in direct opposition to his; that she had been at liberty to see Mademoiselle at Belle Chasse as often as she pleased, but that after my departure she could no longer be permitted to be alone with her or to take her out; because, by her retaining the same authority as ever, the public might suppose that his opinions had changed, or at least that he consented to his children being educated in different ones. M. d'Orleans then drew an interesting picture of the injury his daughter would sustain in her happiness, her health and her education; her education would remain unfinished, her talents destroyed before they arrived at maturity, and nothing would be effectual to console her under a misfortune so unexpected and accompanied with such distressful circumstances. What, he asked,

VOL. I. L could

could be said to her in justification of the proceeding, or how were her sufferings to be assuaged? Madame d'Orleans replied that the truth must be concealed from her, and she must be told that my resignation was voluntary. M. d'Orleans rejoined that this would be to traduce and calumniate me, as I had given my word to Mademoiselle never voluntarily to resign; that he would never suffer such a falsehood, even if I could consent to it, and that he would inform her of the exact truth. As the last resource M. d'Orleans tried what effect was to be wrought upon her by the interposition of M. de Chartres, whom he instructed in every particular of our situation. The heart of Madame d'Orleans, naturally sensible and good, was strongly moved by the prayers and tears of her son; but her confidante, apprehensive, no doubt, of the consequences of this tenderness, contrived to place her out of the reach of this influence, and she suddenly departed for Eu, accompanied solely by Madame de Chatelux. Upon this M. d'Orleans sent immediately, by express, a letter to the true author of all these troubles, to Madame de Chatelux, desiring, as he could only attribute the conduct of Madame d'Orleans to her counsels, that she would make choice of some other abode than his house, and would send, in the course of a fortnight, the keys of her apartment to the Palais Royal. The result of this proceeding was *the demand of a separation* on the part of Madame d'Orleans.—In the mean time, faithful to the promise I had given, I had the fortitude to conceal from Mademoiselle the grief that overwhelmed me. On the 26th of April, having contrived that

that Mademoiselle should go without me at eight o'clock in the morning, I took the opportunity of departing. Previously however to my quitting Belle Chasse, I wrote three letters for Mademoiselle, leaving orders that they should be given to her one after another in the course of the day, and that she should be told at the delivery of each, that she was only to receive them when she was *calm and reasonable*. I agreed with M. d'Orleans to indulge her in the hope, not of my resuming my office, but of our seeing one another again, a precaution which we conceived might be necessary to moderate the violence of the impression and the excess of her grief. I shall here present the reader with an exact copy of those letters. At the time of my writing them I had no idea of their appearing in print and in this work; and even had such been my design, it would have been impossible to assume the style which it becomes me to employ when I publicly address myself to Mademoiselle d'Orleans. It was necessary to speak to her heart and endeavour to administer consolation, and the familiar style of our private intercourse was the only one adapted to this end. The following was my first letter.

*25 April 1791, eight o'clock in the evening.*

I AM forced, dear child, to quit you, at least for a time; but I hope we shall meet again. I conjure you, by the tenderness you feel for me, to take care of your health. Madame d'Orleans compels me to withdraw; but I leave you my heart. Reflect, dear child, that it is incumbent on you to  
 L 2                      ' submit

' submit to the will of a mother, and that,  
 ' notwithstanding the rigour of her present  
 ' proceeding, this mother loves you, and  
 ' would adore you if she knew you better;  
 ' reflect that she has in her heart every good  
 ' and virtuous quality, and that the prejudice  
 ' which separates us is not her work. Be  
 ' assured that, absent from my dear child, my  
 ' tender friend, my thoughts will be occupied  
 ' with her alone. Yes I will write to you  
 ' every day. I will think of you every mo-  
 ' ment of my life. As the recompense of my  
 ' cares, let your conduct be reasonable; sur-  
 ' mount your grief, dispel your melancholy,  
 ' if my life be dear to you; I could not live,  
 ' if I knew you to be ill. I will not quit  
 ' France, because you are there. You will  
 ' hear news of me continually. I request  
 ' that after to-morrow you will take an airing  
 ' with your tender and sensible father\*. He  
 ' loves you beyond expression. Let him not  
 ' suffer the mortal chagrin of seeing you a prey  
 ' to unreasonable sorrow. Dear child of my  
 ' heart, adieu. This heart you ought to be  
 ' able to read, and to know all that passes  
 ' within it. Never, never will it love any  
 ' object upon earth more ardently than you.'

---

SECOND LETTER.

25 April, at midnight.

' YOU have felt, dear child, the violent  
 ' palpitation of heart I experienced on your

\* The lamentable state of her health would not permit her to follow this advice.

' retiring

retiring to rest. My tears did not flow, my countenance was unalterable; but you discovered this involuntary emotion \* . . .

They came to inform me that you were unwell: without guessing at the cause of your indisposition, I had the courage to take my harp and play in your hearing.—Oh! my dear and beloved friend! I have deceived you; I have deceived you for the first time in my life; but I wished to make you pass a good night: beside had I left you in the uncertainty and apprehension in which I found you, you would not have consented to go out the next day; and was it possible for us to take leave of each other? It was not. I was desirous to save you these heart rending adieus. . . . I am just come from your bed-side; I have just been embracing you. . . .

\* She was upon my knees with her head reclined on my bosom, and as she embraced me she felt the throbbings of my heart. She withdrew in silence, and was taken ill in her bed, but without fainting. Perceiving her in tears, the persons about her enquired into the cause; she replied that she wished to speak with me, but desired that I might not be informed of it till I was alone in my apartment. They promised, and in the mean time they made known to me her situation. I was already uneasy, as I had heard a noise in her chamber, which is separated from mine only by a glass door: having also been told that she had some confused suspicions, I took my harp and played loud enough for her to hear me. This calmed her a little. In about three quarters of an hour I approached the glass door to perceive if she slept: she burst into tears, and confessed to me the vague apprehensions that floated in her imagination. I was obliged to protest that there was no foundation for her fears. I have never suffered so much as at that moment I left her perfectly satisfied with the assurance I had given her. I returned to my chamber, and immediately wrote this letter.

‘ My dear Child, I would never have desired  
 ‘ to quit you, let them have treated me as they  
 ‘ would ; but Madame d’Orleans herself has  
 ‘ demanded my resignation : she must be obey-  
 ‘ ed. To-morrow morning I will write you  
 ‘ a long letter, but it will not be delivered to  
 ‘ you till you appear calm and reasonable. My  
 ‘ sweet child, I love you a thousand times bet-  
 ‘ ter than my life ; be watchful of your health,  
 ‘ if you would not destroy me. Depend upon  
 ‘ it we shall see one another again. Be calm,  
 ‘ do not give yourself up to extravagant grief.  
 ‘ It is your friend’s request, and she asks it in  
 ‘ the name of every thing she has done for  
 ‘ you.’

---

THIRD LETTER.

*29 April, in the morning.*

‘ **M**Y dear child, I will not write to you  
 ‘ more at large. I promised never to desire to  
 ‘ quit you let them treat me as they would ; I  
 ‘ have kept my word. To what I have suffered  
 ‘ for two years past you are a witness ; I have  
 ‘ been treated as they would not have treated  
 ‘ a chamber-maid, Madame d’Orleans having  
 ‘ forbidden me to come to the Palais Royal  
 ‘ even along with you. Other instances equally  
 ‘ harsh I will not recount. If I had not loved  
 ‘ you as one human being never loved another,  
 ‘ I should have asked, and ought to have ask-  
 ‘ ed, for my dismissal at the first symptoms of  
 ‘ such a conduct ; but to preserve your life my  
 ‘ patience was inexhaustible. It is now almost  
 ‘ a month ago that I entreated M. d’Orleans  
 ‘ to procure me a final explanation with Ma-  
 ‘ dame, fearing as I did that the most unequi-  
 ‘ vocal



' vocal marks of variance would discover them-  
 ' selves either when we set out for the country,  
 ' or while we were there\*. Madame d'Or-  
 ' leans, who had always refused every discussion  
 ' with me, and the so much as reading my Jour-  
 ' nal, promised, for this once, to do what M.  
 ' d'Orleans required. She came to Belle  
 ' Chasse at nine in the morning, and, instead of  
 ' coming to an explanation, drew a paper from  
 ' her pocket; written without the knowledge  
 ' of M. d'Orleans, which she read to me, and  
 ' which gave me to understand that, *in confi-*  
 ' *deration of the difference of our opinions*, I had  
 ' no other party to take than that of immedi-  
 ' ately withdrawing myself, and that if I re-  
 ' mained she was resolved never to see me again  
 ' as long as she lived. You will readily con-  
 ' ceive, dear child, that after such a declara-  
 ' tion from the lips of a mother, it was impos-  
 ' sible for me to continue with her daughter.  
 ' In reality I well knew that for two years my  
 ' resignation had been the object of her desire :  
 ' but she demanded it not, and I remained.  
 ' At length she pronounced the decree, and it  
 ' was necessary to submit. I wished at least to  
 ' be with you in the sacred season of Easter,  
 ' and it is for that reason my departure has  
 ' been deferred to the 26th. Judge, dear child,  
 ' what must have been my sufferings during  
 ' the last month I have passed with you! In  
 ' giving you your lessons, in affecting calmness  
 ' and tranquillity, how many sighs and tears  
 ' have I suppressed! What anguish of heart

\* I had just grounds for my apprehensions in this respect.  
 Beside, the actual state of things was more than sufficient  
 to make it desirable that this discussion should not be defer-  
 red.

' have I experienced! But I knew that my  
 ' adieus would be insupportable to you; I  
 ' therefore concealed from you in this manner  
 ' my departure, and suffered during a month  
 ' the most terrible restraint: the consideration  
 ' that it was for you, inspired me with the for-  
 ' titude. Cheerfully would I sacrifice my life  
 ' to insure your happiness: you know what  
 ' are my feelings in this respect, and you can-  
 ' not therefore imagine that any thing could  
 ' appear too hard for me that tended to your  
 ' advantage. Imitate then, my beloved friend,  
 ' this courage; let not your soul be too much  
 ' cast down; afflict not mortally the best of fa-  
 ' thers by abandoning yourself to your sorrows  
 ' and your grief, and add not to my present  
 ' evils the most cruel alarms. As to Madame  
 ' d'Orleans, she separates us, it is true; but  
 ' reflect that to her desire and choice you have  
 ' been indebted for the twelve years we have  
 ' lived together, and of consequence for the  
 ' advantage you may have derived from them.  
 ' She is blinded at present by unjust prejudice;  
 ' but her soul is angelic; it is replete, as I  
 ' have a thousand times told you, with every  
 ' thing good, noble and virtuous. What you  
 ' have observed in her for eighteen months that  
 ' is unjust and capricious, is derived from an-  
 ' other source, and is foreign and unnatural to  
 ' her character. Ever love and cherish her:  
 ' this sentiment is deeply engraven on your  
 ' heart, and you cannot better prove to Ma-  
 ' dame d'Orleans your affection and the purity  
 ' of your principles, than by your submission.  
 ' Your father has not left you ignorant of his  
 ' fears respecting the separation which Madame  
 ' d'Orleans has demanded: cruel and heart-  
 ' rending

‘ rending fears for you and your brothers ! Ex-  
 ‘ ert every effort to reconcile and unite them ;  
 ‘ it is a duty sacredly incumbent upon you,  
 ‘ and I am certain you will discharge it with  
 ‘ the most fervid zeal. I thank God, I am not  
 ‘ made the pretext of this last violence of Ma-  
 ‘ dame d’Orleans. When she came about a  
 ‘ month ago to desire I would withdraw my-  
 ‘ self, I replied that she should be obeyed ; she  
 ‘ obtained therefore all that she wished. A few  
 ‘ days after M. d’Orleans wrote to Madame de  
 ‘ Chatelux for the keys of her apartment in  
 ‘ the Palais Royal, and Madame d’Orleans  
 ‘ then demanded a separation : it is easy to di-  
 ‘ vine from what motive and by whose instiga-  
 ‘ tion.

‘ It is cruel, my beloved friend, to be torn  
 ‘ from each other ; but our misfortune is not  
 ‘ without example. You remember the histo-  
 ‘ ry of Fenelon and his pupil the Duke of  
 ‘ Burgundy\* : they were separated nearly in  
 ‘ a similar manner. The young prince sustain-  
 ‘ ed an irreparable loss, a loss much superior  
 ‘ to yours, for he lost Fenelon, and he was  
 ‘ destined to reign. He felt acutely his misfor-  
 ‘ tune ; he loved Fenelon all his life, he was  
 ‘ faithful to the claims of friendship and of  
 ‘ gratitude ; but the sentiments of nature re-  
 ‘ mained unalterable ; his respect for his grand-  
 ‘ father equalled his regret ; he wept, but he  
 ‘ murmured not. Such is the conduct I ex-  
 ‘ pect from my Adela. Do you estimate, my  
 ‘ dear friend, at no value the liberty we shall

\* I had purposely read to her this history a few days previ-  
 ous to my departure.

‘ enjoy of writing to each other\*? You will  
 ‘ read my heart, and I shall read yours; we  
 ‘ shall always be thinking of one another.  
 ‘ Would you prove to me the truth of your  
 ‘ affection? Be courageous; take care of  
 ‘ your health; cultivate your talents, those  
 ‘ talents which you owe to the warmest love  
 ‘ that ever animated a human breast, that harp.

‘ . . . . .  
 ‘ Oh, my beloved child! I feel the effect that  
 ‘ the sound alone of this instrument will pro-  
 ‘ duce on thy sensible heart, and what ideas  
 ‘ it will recal to thy remembrance! Can you  
 ‘ consent that I consider all those hours as  
 ‘ lost that I employed in teaching you to  
 ‘ play? At these very hours I will every day  
 ‘ play myself, from six to eight o’clock, the  
 ‘ lessons that we have performed together, and  
 ‘ that I would not have you forget, because  
 ‘ I hope we shall yet play them together  
 ‘ again. If I could but think that you played  
 ‘ them too at the very same time, I should  
 ‘ put the deception on myself of supposing  
 ‘ that we were together; it would be a source  
 ‘ of happiness to me, and these hours would

\* It is known that in the case of Fenelon and the Duke of Burgundy, the preceptor and the pupil were forbidden to write to each other, and they corresponded in secret. We must hate the man who could enjoin such a command; but Fenelon is not without blame for having authorised the disobedience of his pupil. For the rest, when I consider that Fenelon was *bated and disgracefully dismissed*, for the *atracious crime* of writing the *Adventures of Telemachus* for his pupil; when I recollect that *Louis the Great*, after reading this work, exclaimed: *I knew M. de Cambray possessed a weak mind, but I never before suspected him of having a corrupt heart*, I feel the fullest conviction that I have no right to complain.

‘ be

‘ be regarded by your friend as the sweetest  
‘ hours in the day. I shall take a harp with  
‘ me for that purpose: write me word whe-  
‘ ther you agree to this sort of engagement,  
‘ and whether your heart beats in unison with  
‘ mine. If you should be obliged to change  
‘ your hour on account of your promenades,  
‘ send me word of that too, and I will con-  
‘ form myself to the change you shall make.\*

‘ Continue to be uniformly good, mild,  
‘ equal. I recommend to you all your people,  
‘ who have given me the most affecting proofs  
‘ of their attachment †. I mention this cir-  
‘ cumstance, because I am sure that it will be  
‘ an additional motive with you to be kind to  
‘ them. Be always mild and affectionate to-  
‘ wards Mademoiselle Rime, whose mind is  
‘ so rational and so virtuous. Forget not the

\* Notwithstanding her situation, she made frequent at-  
tempts to play; but how was it possible she should succeed,  
when her hands still shake to such a degree that she can only  
devote half her usual time to this study of which she is so  
fond? The tremulous state of her nerves, her debility, her  
extreme thinness, and the total alteration of her figure,  
plainly evince what have been her sufferings, the effects  
of which will not speedily be removed. She had never  
before been sick; on the contrary she owed to my cares the  
most perfect health.

† This painful moment of my life was softened to me by  
the demonstrations of kindness, esteem and affection, which  
I shall never cease to remember, on the part of the nuns  
of that respectable house, who wrote me a most pathetic  
letter, on the part of the tutors and masters concerned in  
the education of my pupils, and of their servants in general.  
All of these persons wrote to me, either separately or in a  
corporate capacity, the day or the day but one, before my  
departure. I have carefully preserved their letters as the  
most honourable and irresistible proofs of the irreproachable-  
ness of my conduct.

‘ true



' true friendship which I bear for Horain\*.  
 ' I have ordered him to write to me, and he  
 ' will inform me whether my child is reason-  
 ' able and follows my advice. Remember that  
 ' it is you alone who can by your conduct  
 ' console me. If you give yourself up to ex-  
 ' travagant grief, you will kill me, for I am  
 ' already weakened and exhausted by the  
 ' sleepless nights I have passed and the horri-  
 ' ble constraint I have imposed on myself for  
 ' a month past. Place your confidence in  
 ' God, my dear child, who enjoins and re-  
 ' wards resignation; pray for our reunion,  
 ' and be submissive to his will that your  
 ' prayers may be effectual. I embrace my  
 ' child, my dear, my beloved child, with all  
 ' the tenderness which she knows my heart to  
 ' possess. Ah! never shall I give a proof of  
 ' this tenderness equal to the effort I yester-  
 ' day made that you might pass a good night.  
 ' Reflect upon this, and learn from it what  
 ' fortitude and empire over ourselves true  
 ' affection can inspire.

' I authorise you, dear child, to shew all  
 ' my letters without exception to Madame  
 ' d'Orleans. You ought to have no secret  
 ' from her, and there is nothing in my heart  
 ' that I wish to conceal.

' I flatter myself that you will receive Ma-  
 ' dame Topin in a becoming manner: she  
 ' possesses an excellent and estimable charac-  
 ' ter, and great friendship for me. I am sure  
 ' also that you will feel the value of Henri-  
 ' etta's attachment, and that she will soften

\* Valet de chambre of Mademoiselle d'Orleans.

' your



‘ your pains \*. Your other young friend  
‘ take with me: you know the sensibility of  
‘ her heart; you may be assured that we shall  
‘ talk and think of no one but you. Alas!  
‘ we shall stand in great need of each other;  
‘ the same feelings will mutually and wholly  
‘ occupy us; we shall have but one subject of  
‘ conversation, and Adela will be ever present  
‘ with us.’

MY intention was to travel six weeks in Auvergne and in Franche-Comté, afterwards to return to Paris, unknown to Mademoiselle, there to remain a month to inspect the printing of this work, and then to depart for Sil-lery till the approach of winter, which I wished to spend in England, a country equally dear to me from taste, gratitude and friendship, and where I should certainly be more happy than in France, if it were possible to find happiness at a distance from my family, my pupils and my country.

At Clermont. I received letters that began to make me uneasy respecting the situation of Mademoiselle d’Orleans; but upon my arrival at Lyon, I received others of so alarming a nature that I gave up my journey to Franche-Comté, and resolved to return without delay, still intending to remain concealed from her. Six leagues from Auxerre I met an express from M. d’Orleans, whose orders were to go to Besançon where I was supposed to be arrived. He gave me a packet containing letters

\* I had agreed with M. d’Orleans to leave my niece for the present, thinking she might be serviceable to Mademoiselle; but her stay was to be only for three or four months.

from M. d'Orleans, M. de Sillery, my daughter, my pupils, M. Pieyre, and other persons, all informing me that the faintings and convulsions of Mademoiselle, so far from diminishing, *increased every day; that she visibly wasted; and in short that if the state of her health did not amend there was the greatest reason to fear for her life.* The following is a copy of M. d'Orleans' letter.

---

DEAR FRIEND,

I INCLOSE you a letter which I wrote this morning to Madame d'Orleans, and upon which I build my hopes of the life, the health and the happiness of my daughter\*. She has seen it, and from the effect it produced upon her, which it is impossible to describe to you, I fear she would die if her hopes were disappointed.

Her mother, as you will see by the letter she has written to Montpensier†, declares that she has no right over her; that she wishes not to interfere, and that she relies

\* In this letter, as will presently be seen, he informed Madame d'Orleans that he considered her, from a passage in one of her letters, as consenting to my return; that he therefore should immediately press me to do so, and that he thought her consent thus expressed would be sufficient to determine me, particularly when seconded by the situation of his daughter and the knowledge that he had given her the most positive assurance, of seeing me.

† M. de Montpensier sent this letter to M. d'Orleans, because it was an answer to one which his father had requested him to write: of this answer M. d'Orleans also sent me a copy.

absolutely

‘ absolutely upon me to take every precaution  
 ‘ that may be necessary. I repeat, *dear friend\**,  
 ‘ that my daughter will not probably live, and  
 ‘ certainly will never be happy, if you do not  
 ‘ resume your cares. She depends upon it;  
 ‘ her affection for you makes it your duty,  
 ‘ and she joins with me and my children in  
 ‘ conjuring you. *Dear friend*, do not refuse  
 ‘ us; we shall expect your answer with the  
 ‘ utmost impatience, but without apprehen-  
 ‘ sion, certain that it will be favourable and  
 ‘ will be speedily followed by your arrival, since  
 ‘ we are not ignorant of your affection for  
 ‘ your pupil, and are persuaded that you can-  
 ‘ not refuse to comply with the anxiety of our  
 ‘ affection.’

Paris, 10 May 1791.

FROM M. d’Orleans’ letter to Madame  
 d’Orleans I shall cite but one passage relative  
 to Mademoiselle and myself.

. . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .

‘ In your letter to Montpensier you say  
 ‘ that you have no inquietude respecting the  
 ‘ situation of your daughter; your words are  
 ‘ these: *what gives me perfect assurance as to*  
 ‘ *the life of this unfortunate child, is that her*  
 ‘ *father is with her, who will certainly take every*  
 ‘ *precaution to prevent it.* The most certain

\* The words *dear friend*, wherever they occur in this letter, are used as an English phrase in the original. T.

‘ and

‘ and effectual precaution, and indeed the only  
 ‘ one that I can imagine, is to prevail on Ma-  
 ‘ dame de Sillery to resume her cares, and I  
 ‘ shall instantly exert every effort to effect  
 ‘ this.’

Of all the other letters which the packet  
 contained I shall only quote the following  
 passage from that of M. de Sillery.

‘ 4 May 1791.

‘ . . . . .  
 ‘ . . . . .  
 ‘ YOU see by the letter of M. d’Orleans  
 ‘ how desirous he is of your return, and that  
 ‘ he regards it as the only means of saving his  
 ‘ child. The danger must have been very im-  
 ‘ minent, since he has confided to her all the  
 ‘ measures he has taken to prevail on you, and  
 ‘ this has been the only instance in which we  
 ‘ have succeeded in giving her a moment’s con-  
 ‘ solation. He has told her that your return  
 ‘ depends solely on yourself, and it is my opi-  
 ‘ nion that you will not hesitate. I cannot ex-  
 ‘ press the demonstrations of attachment which  
 ‘ all your children evince at this prospect: the  
 ‘ poor little invalid is beside herself with joy  
 ‘ at the idea of seeing you, for she has no  
 ‘ doubt of your coming to save her from  
 ‘ death, or a situation a hundred times worse:  
 ‘ Return then; all that love you expect you  
 ‘ with impatience and cannot be happy till  
 ‘ they see you.’

Was it possible for me to hesitate a moment  
 when I knew Mademoiselle to be in so deplora-  
 ble a state, when she had been given to hope  
 for my speedy return, and M. d’Orleans be-  
 lieved:

lieved that she would die if her hopes were disappointed; when Madame d'Orleans continued to reside at the distance of fifty two leagues from her, and expressly charged M. d'Orleans with the care of every thing likely to console her mind and restore her health? No one could have supposed that Madame d'Orleans, after the repeated expresses that had been sent to her, the minute and alarming accounts she had received, the representations of a physician and the pathetic letters of her children, would have been able to stay away from her daughter: but Madame de Chatelux doubtless strove to persuade her that the danger of Mademoiselle was exaggerated. In the mean time what could Madame de Chatelux know of the matter? Were not a father, brothers, a physician, and twenty other witnesses more worthy of credit? All of these persons affirmed that Mademoiselle was in a very dangerous state, and they had ocular demonstration. Madame de Chatelux *conjectured* that Mademoiselle's illness was not so deplorable as was represented; and was a *conjecture* made at the distance of fifty leagues, and by a person of Madame de Chatelux's character, to outweigh the positive testimony of thirty irreproachable witnesses? In short, had there been ground for suspicion in this case (which most assuredly there was not), it was still an interesting concern, and it was easy to have ascertained the truth. A visit to Belle Chasse was all that was necessary, and Madame d'Orleans would certainly have taken this step, had she consulted only her own heart: her children do not, and cannot doubt of this without ingratitude, from the recollection of what  
Madame

Madame d'Orleans has done for them, from the moment of their birth to the period of this fatal division. I cannot avoid mentioning in this place an incident which it was not possible for me to record in my Journal, because it happened before I began to write my Journal. At the time that I entered upon my office at Belle Chasse, Mademoiselle d'Orleans had a twin sister, whom we had the misfortune to lose. This child at the age of four years fell ill with the measles. I had had this disease; Madame d'Orleans had not had it: it was natural that I should have the care of the child? Madame d'Orleans would never consent to it. She sent me to Saint Cloud with the rest of her children, and shut herself up at Belle Chasse with her little patient, caught the measles, and was in consequence dangerously ill: a generous action, which was accompanied with so much feeling in its circumstances, and so much modest and unaffected rectitude, as greatly augmented its value. I could cite numerous other sublime traits of the goodness and sensibility of Madame d'Orleans; her life is full of them, and they are all engraven on the hearts of her children, to whom it has been my frequent delight to relate such instances as have not fallen within their own experience\*. I will beg leave to relate upon this subject a fact unknown even to Madame d'Orleans herself, and which proves that my

\* I have recorded some of them in my works; among other instances I may refer to the history of the *Solitaires of Normandy*, which has since been converted into a very agreeable comic opera. See also the dedication to my comedy entitled *The Widow of Sarepta*, &c. &c.



object in praising her was not that of insinuating myself into favour, but to satisfy a desire, which I shall ever feel, of doing homage to virtue and truth. In 1776 I made with Madame d'Orleans the tour of Italy. She kept no journal of this interesting excursion, because she knew that I wrote a minute account of it; and it was agreed that, upon our return to Paris, I should lend it her to make an extract of it. But at the end of our tour, when I came to read what I had written, I found it so full of encomiums on the conduct of Madame d'Orleans, that I was ashamed to give it her. She would certainly not have suspected me of speaking of her with affectation because she was to read the Journal; yet it appeared to me so little becoming to submit it to her inspection that I could never resolve to do it. I therefore told her that I would save her the trouble of a fatiguing task and make the extract myself, which I did, and gave her an abridgment only of the Journal\*. This delicacy on my part she has no knowledge of, nor has she ever seen the original work; but I have read it frequently to her children, and have the manuscript still in my possession bound in three large volumes.

The public is now competent to judge whether I taught just and good principles to my pupils, whether I merited the hatred of their mother, whether I deserved to be turned out of my office with every mark of resentment and displeasure, in fine, whether I was right in resuming my connection with a young per-

\* In this abridgment her name was not once mentioned.

son endowed with the purest gratitude and sensibility, and whose attachment for me had been strengthened by all that is calculated to inspire sympathy and affection, in behalf of a victim of injustice, that is, of *ingratitude and persecution*. I do not doubt that this book will furnish fresh matter to my libellers: libel has for a long time been the habitual weapon of my enemies, a sort of vengeance, impotent and mean, that can neither trouble my repose nor wound my reputation. The justification into which I have entered is made up of unquestionable facts and supported by unobjectionable witnesses: I shall not therefore condescend to return any answer to anonymous calumny, and shall only hold myself ready to refute those who shall have the courage to attack me openly.

PRIVATE

PRIVATE JOURNAL OF THE EDUCATION OF THE PRINCES, *commenced at Saint Cloud 28 January 1782.*

---

THE princes were placed under my care, 5 January 1782. I requested a minute account of the distribution and employment of their time. For this I waited six days. It ought to have been given in writing, but it was not, and beside was very imperfect. From this account I learned, that M. Bonnard scarcely concerned himself at all in their education, and that the whole care had devolved upon the Abbé Guyot, and M. Prieur, first valet de chambre. The hours of study were not unalterably fixed, no one presided at the lessons of the masters; the reading did not occupy three quarters of an hour in a day; and three times a week the princes took a lesson in musick for an hour. I struck off the musick master, and altered the whole plan of studies. Among other books, I took away the Fables of Fontaine, Telemachus, Racine\*, and I substituted instead of them, books of history and moral writings suited to the understanding of two children, the eldest of whom was but eight years old. . . . .

\* I have always thought it absurd to put works of the first merit into the hands of children; my reason for this I have assigned in Adelaide and Theodore. The idea was greatly censured at the time, but it since appears to have been pretty generally adopted.

Upon

Upon our arrival at St. Cloud, that is to say, three weeks ago, I examined the princes as to their improvement. They were perfectly ignorant of Latin and English, and could neither read or speak a word of these languages, though they had studied them for the space of three years. They had no accurate knowledge of history but what they had derived from some tables which I had written for the Duchess de Chartres, and which have been five years in her possession. They knew very little of the history of the gods, and nothing of the fabulous metamorphoses: I speak of the Duke de Valois; for as to the Duke de Montpensier, he absolutely knows nothing of any subject. The Duke de Valois could not write a note of six lines that had common sense. They were both unpolite to an extreme, giving no other answer than *yes* or *no*, or a nod of the head, and never expressing their thanks on any occasion. They were also extremely tender and delicate, fearful of the wind and the cold, and incapable not only of running and jumping, but even of walking any tolerable pace, or for more than half an hour. The Duke de Valois had so horrible a dread of dogs, that he turned pale and shrieked whenever he saw one: it was impossible to take hold of a lap dog without murdering it, and he was sure upon these occasions either to burst into tears, or to shew ill humour. The Duke de Valois was fond of silly prattle, and would tell lies sometimes for his diversion. I add to all this, the utmost indifference for the Duke and Duchess de Chartres, never thinking, never caring about them, cold and inanimate when they saw them, and perfectly regardless whether they saw them at all.

all. Such were their bad qualities: now for their good ones. They do not draw badly for their age, and they write very well: the eldest has some knowledge of accounts: they are both mild and obedient: since I have had the care of them they are already less unpolite, and express themselves in better terms. The Duke de Valois can see a dog without any signs of fear; it may be caught without being choaked. He also applies more closely to his lessons.

---

*6 March 1782.*

**I** AM every day more satisfied with the young princes. The Duke de Valois has considerable force of mind and an astonishing memory. I can as yet form no judgment of what may be expected from the Duke de Montpensier.

I have written for them both some moral principles, which are read to them twice a week. . . . .

I read to them continually. I stop sometimes to ask them questions, or to make some reflection. The Duke de Valois always answers with propriety, and appears attentive and interested.

---

*8 April 1782.*

**I** CONTINUE to be charmed with the Duke de Valois, though he has still some very disagreeable manners and low expressions, and occasionally considerable vulgarity. At present  
that

that he is perfectly at his ease with me, he vents without hesitation all the pretty conceits and phrases that have been taught him. For example, he constantly calls his backside *my fifteen*\*, and the stinging gnats that tease us in warm weather his *kindred*†. To express the having made a bad drawing he says, *I have made a splotch*; to signify that he has knocked at a door, *I have beat a march upon it*, &c. All this is highly seasoned with the proverbs of Sancho, and a loud and forced laugh, which is not the least disagreeable of his manners.—He is beside a great gossip, an admirer of old women's tales, and frequently invents lies for his diversion. He has another quality which very much displeases me, that of weeping with a facility which I have never observed in any other person. He is little sensible of gratitude‡, because he imagines that there are no cares, no attentions, no respect to which he is not entitled, a fault that proceeds solely from the defects of his early education, and not from his natural disposition; and I am convinced that, had he been put into my hands a year later, it would have been out of my power to rectify all the injury that would have been done him. He has strength of mind, self-esteem, and a good heart; admirable sources

\* *Mon quinze.*

† The French appellation for this insect is *cousin*, which seems to have been originally derived from the persevering importunity of the creature, the persons tormented by it conceiving a sort of resemblance between this importunity and that of poor relations, whose petitions can with difficulty be dismissed by a man of any fortune. By habit the word has come to lose any ambiguity of meaning. T.

‡ Most assuredly I cannot now reproach him with such a fault.



of hope. Yesterday at the conclusion of the lessons some company called upon me. I withdrew for a moment, and presently returned with Mademoiselle de Chartres, who had in her hand a basket of little cakes. I said to the Duke de Valois, 'Though your Highness did not give to your sister any of the pears which were sent you a few days since, she is willing to divide with you her basket of sweetmeats.' This accusation, made before strangers, threw him into confusion; he blushed, turned pale, stuttered, and received the cakes without any marks of pleasure. I asked him to-day 'if the present of Mademoiselle de Chartres had not been agreeable to him?' He answered me in the negative, and with tears in his eyes. 'You see then,' said I, 'that our greatest satisfaction does not consist in receiving such things as we most love, but in the approbation and esteem of others; and in future you will, I trust, feel how much better it is to be thought obliging and generous, than to eat by yourself all your pears and sweetmeats.'

---

22 April 1782.

A FEW days since I had a long conversation with the princes. What I said to them was nearly as follows. 'I have hitherto employed myself in examining and studying your minds: now that I know them, I shall begin your education, the object of which is to render you virtuous and amiable, that you may be happy and beloved. You may be sure of  
Vol. I. M ' my

' my attachment. Had you been placed in  
 ' the hands of a governor, he would have been  
 ' paid for instructing you: I despise money,  
 ' and have refused to accept any kind of sala-  
 ' ry or recompense. A governor might have  
 ' aspired to honours, such as the blue ribbon,  
 ' to which I can have no pretension. Lastly,  
 ' a governor would not have taken the pains  
 ' to instruct you himself; all the cares of your  
 ' education would have devolved upon a sub-  
 ' governor. I have no sub-governor\*, I shall  
 ' discharge myself all its functions, and you  
 ' will owe your education to me alone. You  
 ' ought therefore to regard me not only as  
 ' your friend, but as your benefactress; for I  
 ' shall bestow upon you what is of more value  
 ' than birth and fortune, which you owe to  
 ' accident: I shall give you reason, virtue,  
 ' agreeable and useful knowledge. The hap-  
 ' piness which I promise you hereafter, you  
 ' may begin to enjoy at present: be obedient  
 ' and sincere, and you will always find me in-  
 ' dulgent; be attentive and industrious, and  
 ' your studies will be pleasing to you, and be-  
 ' side I shall give you some charming rewards.'  
 As I said this the children threw themselves  
 upon my neck, telling me that I was *very good*,  
 and that they had never received *any rewards*.  
 ' These however I promise you; but I must tell  
 ' you at the same time that there will be punish-  
 ' ments. If you behave well, I will reward you;  
 ' if ill, I will punish you.' They exclaimed that  
 this was just. ' I know that you have not

\* M. Lebrun had then only the title of Reader; it was  
 some years after that the title of Sub-governor was conferred  
 upon him.

‘ been accustomed to do penance, but neither  
‘ have rewards been bestowed upon you. I  
‘ will imitate the conduct of God towards his  
‘ children, who punishes the wicked and re-  
‘ wards the good.’ The princes very cordially  
assented to this agreement, and I told that their  
first recompense should be a charming toy, a  
little wooden temple, which might be taken  
to pieces, and which they might pull down  
and build up again for their diversion as often  
as they pleased. This recompense will begin  
their course of architecture, which will be the  
more instructive and useful, as it will occupy  
no part of the time consecrated to study, and  
as it will have the air of amusement.

I shall here speak of the persons concerned  
in their education. The Abbé Guyot, who  
owed his place to my recommendation, I did  
not at that time know. In future I will never  
recommend a person upon the report of ano-  
ther. With a very moderate understanding  
and superficial information, he has the misfor-  
tune to think himself possessed of superior pe-  
netration, and the most accurate knowledge  
of the world. So far from this however he  
has no more penetration than an infant, and is  
perfectly ignorant of manners and mankind.  
He is pedantic\* and capricious, with a cold  
heart, a narrow mind, and a barren imagina-  
tion. He has high pretensions, with slender  
merit, little frankness, and nothing amiable. I  
believe him to have probity, that he is incapa-  
ble of a dishonest action, that he possesses pru-

\* In the Journal of M. Lebrun, which contains many  
notes of the Abbé's writing, the reader will be able to judge  
of his pedantry.

dence and decency, that he is punctual and circumspect. He entertains for me the strongest aversion: these are his reasons. The society of M. Bonnard was agreeable to him. M. Bonnard, attentive solely to his pleasure, never troubled himself about the princes, and every thing devolved upon the Abbé, who loved to dictate and domineer. Beside, the summers had been spent at Saint Cloud, a few miles only from Paris, where he received and entertained his friends: now we are to reside at Saint Leu, a distance of no less than five leagues from the capital, where he will see nobody, and where he will be obliged to observe a plan of education marked out by a woman: all this is less flattering and agreeable. The princes also, who do not understand a word of Latin, had been accustomed to devote two hours and a half to this study; whereas it is now to occupy but three quarters of an hour. Such are my wrongs, which I suppose are not to be pardoned. I pass to the other personages.

M. Lebrun, who has just been appointed by me to his office, is a man of honesty, cold and precise, full of good sense, and capable of executing with judgment such things as are prescribed to him. He has read but little, but he has a tolerable knowledge of the English language, and is a very good mathematician.

M. Prieur, first valet de chambre, I found already in the service of the princes; he had possessed all the confidence of M. Bonnard, and it was he in reality who had been sub-governor. The princes have derived from him the most corrupt pronunciation, and by his little mistaken cares he had rendered them absurdly delicate. To him also is it to be ascribed,  
that

that when they were first committed to my care, they were so timid and inanimate, that they could neither run nor jump, that they could neither endure the wind, nor the cold, nor the rain, nor the sun, that they could not prick a finger, or make a false step without bursting into tears. They are still far from being hardy and alert; but they endeavour at least to conquer their weakness; they begin to run and jump, and the Duke de Montpensier can descend a staircase without holding by the hand of M. de Prieur, which is no inconsiderable point gained. M. Prieur thinks me greatly inferior to the chevalier Bonnard, who in the country used to let him sit at table with him and the Abbé. He was heard to call him every day *a dear creature*; but he has none of these honied words for me. His office is simply that of first valet de chambre; but that his feelings might not be too much hurt, I have assigned to him the care of hearing the princes repeat what is given them to learn by heart\*.

6 May 1782.

SINCE the 6th of March I have read with my pupils the continuation of Bossuet's Universal History, and an accurate and detailed life of Henry the fourth of France, in four volumes, by Buri. I point out to the children

\* This complaisance was very much misplaced, M. Prieur having a corrupt pronunciation, which had a considerable effect on that of the Duke de Montpensier. I have been charged with exercising a very despotic authority; and I now can only censure myself for having shewn a number of little acts of veneration which I ought not to have shewn.

such faults of style and bad expressions as strike me. This History of Henry has made a considerable impression both on the heart and the head of the Duke de Valois, to which I have contributed as much as possible by my reflections. I saw with pleasure that the child was proud to think that the blood of the great Henry flowed in his veins. The particulars of his death drew a torrent of tears from his eyes. A few days after, he asked me for a portrait of this prince, and I gave both to him and his brother a seal on which the head of Henry was engraved. The Duke de Valois kissed the head. ‘I am delighted,’ said I to him, ‘to see you in this sentiment. Think often of this great man, whose memory will ever be dear to Frenchmen, because he was generous and good, and whose love of truth merited a friend like Sully. Henry the Fourth had his weaknesses; but I have proved to you, as we read his history, that they are to be attributed solely to the defects of his education and the pernicious examples which he received in his early youth. You, who are descended from him, you, who will have a better education than his could have been, will, I hope, possess all his virtues and his greatness of soul, without any of his weaknesses. Beside a king has one sure way of obtaining our indulgence for his weaknesses; he has only to make his subjects happy: but a prince who is never to reign, does not experience the same lenity. Thus, as you will not be a king, if you should acquire all the virtues of Henry the Fourth, and should have at the same time his defects, you will not obtain a fourth part of his glory; and these defects



‘defects will dishonour and degrade you, as you cannot expiate them by effecting the happiness of the nation.’ . . . . .

From the moment that M. Lebrun entered upon his office, I ordered him to write a minute journal of every thing which the princes should say and do when I was not present.—The article of the day, accurately made, is regularly brought to me; and the princes, seeing me read every evening a detailed account of their behaviour, have the continual fear of this Journal before their eyes, which produces astonishing effects.

---

*Saint Leu, 8 May 1782.*

**W**E arrived this day at Saint Leu. The Duke de Valois is ordered to take asses milk. Though he has apparent strength, his health is very far from being good, which I attribute to the bad regimen of his early education, to the frequent use of dainties, of rich pastry, of a profusion of cream with his coffee, and the total want of exercise. His brother, naturally more delicate, has an alarming degree of weakness, though they are both stronger and have better health than when they were first committed to my care. I observed also that their apartment in the Palais Royal, being on a level with the ground, might be damp and unwholesome; the physician, M. Michel, was of the same opinion; and it is resolved that they shall have next winter a different apartment, and not on the ground floor. I have had a pulley fixed in their chamber, that they might draw weights proportioned to their strength,

an exercise that is very salutary, and from which Mademoiselle de Chartres and Pamela derive the most astonishing benefit. They have also a little garden appropriated to themselves, in which there is an artificial well, that they might exercise themselves in drawing water: their buckets have a double bottom for the purpose of adding pieces of lead in proportion, as their strength shall increase. They have all the necessary tools, and the garden will be cultivated by themselves under the inspection of a gardener. The gardener attends them likewise in their morning promenade, to teach them the names of the different trees and shrubs. Thus will they learn agriculture during their walks and recreations, and no time will be lost upon it. They have already one of their palaces of architecture, and they know by heart almost all the terms of this science.

10 May 1782.

I AM very much dissatisfied with Prieur. The Princes are faultless while they are with me, because they both fear and love me; but when they are out of my sight their behaviour is very different. On these occasions Prieur is continually saying to them, '*I shall tell your friend.*' Then follow prayers and entreaties on their part, which are always concluded with a promise that he will be silent. Two inconveniences result from this; the first that Prieur loses

all

all influence and weight with them, as they know that he has engaged to tell me every thing they say and do; and secondly that the princes themselves are thus habituated to dissimulation, since on their parts they have equally promised to conceal nothing from me. I am disgusted with this conduct, and if I cannot persuade Prieur to alter it, I will put a stop to it by dismissing him. In the task I have undertaken, the difficulty is not to educate the children, but to guide and direct the subordinate persons who are necessary instruments in the execution of our plan.

---

20 May 1782.

I HAVE commenced with the princes a course of natural history. We read the Dictionary of Bomare, in a systematical order, by means of a Key which I have made to it, omitting such articles as are not adapted to their age, or which decency will not permit me to read. My daughter and four or five other persons attend these readings, which last for an hour and a quarter, and with which the princes are infinitely delighted. . . . .

---

27 August 1782.

THE princes have the assistance of the only master I am able to procure them here, a joiner. They have all the implements of his trade, and the occupation is highly amusing

to them. This, with their wooden palaces, and shuttlecock, constitute their recreations in wet weather.

. . . . .

Among other things, I have composed for the princes a compendium of moral and religious instruction, consisting of seven pages, which is read to them three times a week. . .

The princes are much less unruly, are more polite, and have particularly more feeling than was apparent some months since. I may say with confidence that they have an infinitely stronger sense of the affection they owe to the Duke and Dukes de Chartres. They have lost the chief defects of their pronunciation, and their vulgar and absurd manner of speaking. They did not understand a word of English; they can now speak it with tolerable facility, and they read prose charmingly. They could neither run nor walk; at present they are not deficient in activity for their age, and they walk very well. The Duke de Valois was afraid of every thing; he is now disciplined in hardiness, and a dog has no terrors. He was extremely addicted to lying\*, and it is still necessary to keep a watch over him in this respect; but he is almost entirely cured of the vice. He is still too talkative, when at his ease, but he is much less so than he was. He has acquired during his recreations a perfect knowledge of the three orders.

\* This vice was merely the effect of the silly prattle in which he had been indulged, for it was only in his gossipings that he practised it, and never to exculpate himself from any accusation; in such cases he always confessed his faults with a candour and frankness that were a striking feature in his character.

of architecture, and a thousand other little things, as the terms of heraldry for example, and he has some idea of the different handicraft trades. He has more than a smattering of natural history, a science of which he is particularly fond. He has made an astonishing progress in drawing, as well as in every thing else that has been taught him, and has derived singular advantage from our readings. In short, it is impossible, I believe, for any child to make a greater general proficiency in the space of a single year. In the winter I accompanied him once a fortnight to the theatre. On our return, I accustomed him to write analyses of the performances he had seen, leaving a marginal space for my observations. We also read the plays of Campistron: the prince, as we proceed, makes in his own apartment an analysis of each play from memory, which is regularly brought to me; and I then write my observations in the margin, and explain them to him. In proportion as his copy books are filled, I lay them by in regular classes. . . . , . . . . .

. . . . .

30 January, 1783.

. . . . .

I GAVE to the princes, the day before yesterday, a new moral disquisition which I had composed for them. . . . .

. . . . .

*Education*

*Education of Mademoiselle de Chartres\*.*

**M**ADEMOISELLE de Chartres was only twelve months old when she was confided to my care: she is now five years and a half. She walks and runs with surprising agility, and a promenade of six miles does not tire her. She is mild, tractable, obedient, sensible, and sincere. Her spirits are uniformly cheerful, and her application is astonishing. She has nothing of obstinacy or sullenness, and exhibits every promise of a strong discernment and a rich understanding. A native of England of the same age could not speak the language of that country with greater facility, or understand it better. She reads French currently on every kind of subject, and music perfectly when written in the G cleff. She knows some prayers in English, a little of the Catechism, and a few short tales. She begins to explain her historical tapestry in a very pretty manner, as well as her fire-screen of the history of France. . . . .

---

11 February 1783.

. . . . .  
 . . . . .

IN short, the whole expence of Mademoiselle d'Orleans has not exceeded, for the past

\* She was still called by this name, though her sister, Mademoiselle d'Orleans, was dead.

year,



year, the sum of 3055 livres, 9 sols†, by an account, which I have in my possession, kept and drawn up by Mademoiselle Nonnon. The expences of the preceding years have been in the same proportion. A private person in good circumstances is scarcely at less expence in a convent, and certainly Mademoiselle de Chartres is as well dressed as it is possible to be at her age. To introduce this economy, I was obliged, upon my arrival at Belle Chasse, to inform myself of the prices paid by Madame de Rochambault to the different tradesmen and work people, all of which I reduced by at least one half. For example, for making the robes of Mademoiselle de Chartres, at that time twenty months old, they paid fifteen francs: a woman of the most splendid appearance does not pay for the making her robe more than twelve francs. I reduced this price from fifteen francs to five livres, and the charge for this article has never since exceeded the average at which I fixed it. I acknowledge indeed that there are a thousand reasons why a princess, grown to woman's estate, should pay higher than another; but I can see none why she should pay dearer in a period of infancy. . . . .

I return to the accounts of Mademoiselle Nonnon. They afford sufficient proof of her honesty, but they have neither the order nor perspicuity that might be desired, nor are sufficiently pervaded with a spirit of economy. I have not yet been able to bring her to deliver in her account on the first day of each month; a thousand frivolous prettexts and un-

meaning excuses perpetually suggest themselves. The unhappy incidents that have occurred in the course of the last year of her life, have very excusably deprived her of the perfect command of her understanding for a period of more than eight months. She also depends upon the particular indulgence I entertain for her in consideration of her services, her affection for the children of the Duke and Duchesse de Chartres, and her unwearied efforts for their benefit. Hitherto indeed I have yielded to this consideration, and nothing but the gratitude of which she is entitled from Madame and Monseigneur could have given me three years patience with her as to this and some other omissions: at length I have told her fairly that I expected the same obedience from her as from the rest. I determined to terrify her, as she has faithfully promised to adopt the method I had so often vainly prescribed. This method is to deliver in her accounts on the first of every month, with the receipts of all the trades people, the payment of whom is entrusted to her. If in these accounts there be any useless expences, I shall comment upon them in the margin, and forbid their being repeated; I shall then sign this account, which shall be carried to the treasurer to be paid, and the whole making a large volume, like the collection of the house-keeper's accounts, the accounts shall be separately signed by the treasurer, and the book deposited in my hands. I have forbidden Mademoiselle Nonnon to buy any toy or play-thing without my directions. By these means the expence will be considerably reduced; though, such as it is,  
it

A  
year  
not  
ther  
man  
drun  
distr  
apar

it might pass for well-regulated, if we formed  
our judgment by comparison. . . . .

---

3 March 1783.

. . . . .  
I ACCOMPANIED the princes a few days  
since to the house of a poor paralytic woman  
of the name of Busca, but who is called in  
the neighbourhood where she resides, op-  
posite S. Jacques du haut pas, the holy wo-  
man. The princes wept at sight of her dis-  
tress; and having heard the recital of her  
misfortunes, they gave her each a louis, and  
promised her twelve francs a month during  
her life. On coming away they voluntarily  
asked me to accompany them to the house of  
this poor woman once a year.  
. . . . .

---

28 May 1783.

*Education of the Count de Beaujollois.*

AS the Count de Beaujollois is but three  
years of age, I have conceived that it would  
not be practicable to place him with his bro-  
thers. He is, I am told, stubborn and un-  
manageable, and always crying, or beating a  
drum. This would be a perpetual source of  
distraction to them, and the more so, as their  
apartments, both here and at Paris, consist  
only

only of a bed-chamber and an adjoining room. I have thought it necessary therefore to form a separate arrangement for his education. . . . .

This arrangement occasions considerable mortification to the two elder princes; but I affect not to notice it, and proceed as if nothing was the matter. . . . .

14 June 1783.

THE Count de Beaujollois arrived this morning: he is handsome and good-natured. I have given to the Abbé Mariotini, a copy of a paper of instructions relative to this child; the original, in my own hand-writing, I have preserved. . . . .

11 July 1783.

WE continue our little abridgment of natural history, which we read for twenty minutes every evening: we devote also three quarters of an hour to the study of botany; from some fresh plants with which we are supplied by an excellent botanist in the neighbourhood: we began to-day. This course will be completed in about a month or five weeks, as the princes have been taught by me already all the terms of this science. . . . .

THE

14 July 1783.

THE Count de Beaujollois is headstrong and capricious; but he displays astonishing marks of understanding. He is cheerful, fond, and has a thousand graces. . . . .

---

9 September 1783.

I HAVE this summer been more dissatisfied than ever with the Abbé Guyot. His petulance, his caprice, and his personal enmity to me have been so apparent as to attract the notice of every one. He makes himself ridiculous in the house. I do not most assuredly in any way contribute to it by my behaviour: I never speak of him, I treat him with unalterable politeness, and am careful not to let him perceive that I am conscious of his frequent rudeness to me, and how much he is governed by spleen. In other respects, he attends invariably to the Latin lessons, and observes with exactness all my injunctions relative to the princes. As to M. Lebrun, he appears to know at least, if not to feel the injustice of his conduct towards me†. He

† Gratitude and friendship ought to have attached M. Lebrun to me by inviolable ties. He had been secretary to M. de Sillery; I obtained him a place of five thousand livres in the Palais Royal; and afterwards, conceiving that I should possess in him a true friend, I associated him in the education of the princes. His place in the Palais Royal, which he resigned, I procured for one of his brothers who lived in Provence, and who holds it to this day. Notwithstanding all these services, M. Lebrun became my enemy.

has

has done every thing in his power to make me forget a proceeding which nothing I think can justify. I am upon perfectly good terms with him; but he may perceive, though I have no rancour, that I have the remembrance of his wrongs. My mother tells me that he has spoken to her upon the subject, that he wept and discovered great sensibility. All this, as yet, makes no impression on me. I am far from being vindictive, I abhor malice; I believe however that there are wrongs which we ought not to forget, and which we cannot forget without weakness. This want of firmness I have a thousand times fallen into in my youth; reflection has taught me the danger and even absurdity of it. A person may reform his character, but he seldom or ever totally changes it. I am certain that I shall never have a true confidence in M. Lebrun, though it is possible that he may one day regain my friendship †.

---

15 September 1783.

.....

WE began to-day a little course of engraved gems, from an immense collection of casts in sulphur, brought from Italy by the Duke de Chartres for the use of the Duke de Valois. This collection complete cost fifty louis: it is accompanied with a very minute explanation in Italian, which we translate to

† He not only regained my friendship, but my unbounded confidence, which he has since obliged me a second time to withdraw, and that for ever.

the



the princes into French, myself one day, and M. Laurent the next.

I have this day given a new disquisition to be read to the princes, consisting of three pages of my writing. . . . .

I have been in the habit of dining regularly at Belle Chasse with Mademoiselle de Chartres at one o'clock, an hour which is not at all convenient to me. But as Mademoiselle de Chartres completed her sixth year the 22d of last August, it is time to introduce her into company. She repeats to me every day some little moral tales in verse. To-day she took her first lesson in drawing: she formed an eye very successfully. To-morrow she will take her first lesson in writing. . . . .

---

20 September 1783.

THE Count de Beaujollois is the most charming child in the world. At so early an age I have never met with an instance of so strong a desire to oblige. He is mild, sensible and sprightly. He has not the smallest timidity, a feeling that I shall be careful to preserve in him. His temper is delightful, and there is a grace in his deportment that is truly original. . . . .

SINCE

8 November 1783.

SINCE the day before yesterday the Duke de Valois has been indisposed by a fever which has interrupted our lessons. M. Saiffert says that great care must be taken to cool his blood. The high living, as crisp almonds, pastry, coffee with cream; in which he was indulged in his infancy, and the want of exercise till he was put into my hands, have very much injured his constitution.

2 December 1783.

M. SAIFFERT has informed me that the liver of the Duke de Valois is affected, that continual exercise is necessary, and that close application will be prejudicial to him. I have therefore contrived that he should walk up and down my chamber during the whole time that he takes his lessons with me. This must unavoidably be injurious to his education, and is the more to be lamented as he has an excellent memory, and the most promising talents. With good health, he would have been a prodigy at the age of fifteen\*.

\* I succeeded at last in perfectly establishing his health. But the attention it required was a considerable impediment to his studies during the first four years of his education.

*Mademoiselle.*

*Mademoiselle.*

**S**HE is perfect in reading; she begins to write; she draws eyes and other features of the human face. She knows her catechism in English. She can repeat three or four French and two English tales, in verse. I have given her her first lessons in French and Roman history, and in mythology. Mademoiselle is less timid, and uniformly mild and assiduous; but I perceive in her a strong inclination to violate truth, and invent little idle stories. She has learned this solely from Mademoiselle Nonnon, who, with a thousand valuable qualities, is strangely addicted to falsehood, which is a source of very great regret to me, as I am singularly fond of Nonnon. I cannot conceive how, with so many virtues, it is possible to possess so mean a vice. But the habit is rooted in her. If I perceive that it continues to influence the mind of Mademoiselle, I shall think myself obliged to take a step that will be painful to me beyond expression. . . . .

---

8 June 1784.

**T**HE princes continue to cultivate their gardens, and they take every day an English walk\* . . . . .

\* A walk with such persons only as spoke English, and during which they were not allowed to converse in any other language.

A few

A few days ago I gave them their first lessons in Italian, as they now understand English well enough to begin this language. At present nobody instructs them but myself. When we have cleared the way a little, I shall consign them to the Abbé Mariotini; but I am desirous of saving them the tediousness of the first rudiments, as I conceive that I have a happy method for that purpose. . . . .

The Duke de Valois, by the express order of Monseigneur, has begun to ride on horseback, and already rides tolerably well. The other day he rode four leagues, and was not at all fatigued in the evening. His age is ten years and a half; and the Duke de Chartres, his father, did not begin to ride till the age of thirteen: his son will, at that age, be a complete horseman\*. . . . .

2 July 1784.

THE Duke de Chartres has introduced the most economical reforms in his expenditure, with a view to liquidate his debts. He has only reserved for himself a hundred thousand francs†; and he gives a hundred to his children, and a hundred and fifty to the Duchess de Chartres.

\* M. de Beaujollois, at the same age, rode last year twenty leagues on horseback in one day without being fatigued. But I had the care of his infancy from the time of his being three years old.

† 416*l*.

Since

Since my return from Saint Leu I have risen every morning at nine o'clock at latest, Mademoiselle requiring now my most assiduous care, particularly as I find that Nonnon is continually giving her sweetmeats, cream, and other dainties, in defiance of my express prohibition. Mademoiselle is by this means grown exceedingly thin. I have lately accustomed myself to pass half the day with her; but as this is not sufficient, I will in future never permit her to be out of my sight. As soon as she awakes I send to her Aimée, upon whom I have the most perfect dependance, and Pamela, who give her her breakfast, which, by order of the physicians, is rye-bread and milk without sugar.

To prevent any improper indulgence on the part of Mademoiselle Nonnon, Aimée and Pamela will stay with her till my hour of awaking, and she then comes into my chamber and studies till eleven when she goes out every day to walk with Pamela and Aimée. Afterwards she returns to my apartment till dinner: we then dine together, and after dinner she and Pamela walk again. In the afternoon she comes to me and takes her lesson of English, and I give her myself her afternoon's refreshment. The time of her brother's lessons she spends with Aimée and Pamela in my closet; at half after eight we sup together, and I then see her to bed. . . .

---

18 December 1784.

**T**HIS day the ears of Mademoiselle were bored, when she not only avoided crying out,

out, but did not even make the least wry face, which at her age is a proof of courage. . . .

31 December 1784.

THE Count de Beaujollois gives hopes of an understanding equal to the sweetness of his disposition. He is more obedient, more attentive to his little lessons, and reason and friendship have already the greatest power over him.

Mademoiselle has made considerable proficiency. She has learned by heart this year a hundred verses, and an abridgment of the history of France. She reads, explains and speaks English admirably. She has acquired a general idea of geography. Her improvement in drawing is apparent. Her character is precisely what one could wish: sensible, grateful, generous, mild, equal, persevering; she has not the shadow of a fault; I have never seen an instance in her of peevishness or impatience; she is incapable of the slightest impulse of envy or jealousy; and at the same time is alive to emulation. To all this I may add the utmost cheerfulness and vivacity, though I have never seen a child so little volatile and unsteady. She has gained prodigiously in every species of knowledge within the past year. Every Sunday, for the last eight months, she has gone with me to mass; she knows her catechism perfectly; and at Easter she shall go to confession. . . .

TO



18 January 1785.

TO attach the children to the Duchess de Chartres, I have proposed their dining with her every Monday, which she approves. She comes for Mademoiselle, and brings her back with the princes at a quarter before four. I shall attend in future their dancing lessons: my reason is that they are not yet able to dance a country-dance. They shall also draw no more on Sundays in their own apartments; but they shall be brought to me, and I will superintend them. . . .

1 May 1785.

THE children have begun to study Medicine; the mode of instruction being that of shewing them drugs ticketed with a short account of their virtues, &c.

For a fortnight past I have taken the princes about three mornings in the week to see some manufactories and cabinets. I write but little in this book, having other Journals\*, in which I give an account of every thing we see that is worthy of notice. I accustom the Duke de Valois to write similar accounts, and besides this he composes occasionally upon some subject which I propose to him.

\* I have two Journals of this nature written with my own hand, and which consist of two large volumes, one containing a description of the monuments, cabinets, and paintings that we have seen at Paris; the other an account of all the manufactories of the kingdom, and which we examined at Paris and during our travels,

I shall collect his compositions at the end of every year, and form them into a volume, with my remarks. . . . .

---

*Saint Leu, 28 May 1785.*

**T**HE princes have begun a course of chemistry, which they study three times a week. They went through the same course last year, which I studied with them ‡. . . . .

The eldest prince, in consequence of the death of the Duke d'Orleans, has taken the title of the Duke de Chartres, and hereafter I shall call him by no other name.

‡ They have repeated this course three times, and have read beside a course of natural philosophy.

JOURNAL OF THE EDUCATION OF  
THE PRINCES *by M. Lebrun, from the*  
*5th of January 1782: interspersed with Notes*  
*by Madame de Sillery, and the Abbé Guyot.*

---

*Preliminary instructions given me by the Coun-  
tess de Genlis, 5 January 1782.*

‘ **P** R I V A T E conversation with the Abbé  
‘ Guyot; to request his friendship, civility,  
‘ &c.; to beg of him general information  
‘ with regard to every thing that concerns  
‘ the princes, not forgetting the customs that  
‘ have hitherto been followed; and after this  
‘ conversation to write down the principal  
‘ heads, to assist my memory.

‘ You will let the Abbé do the honours of  
‘ the apartment, and supply his place in his  
‘ absence.

‘ You will reprove the princes equally  
‘ before the Abbé Guyot, as in his absence.

‘ That you may be immediately useful, it is  
‘ my desire that you should have the sole in-  
‘ struction of the princes in mathematics, and  
‘ that M. F\*\*\*\*\* be dismissed: on this  
‘ point you will receive orders from Mon-  
‘ seigneur.

‘ Mr. Rose, the music master, must also be dismissed. I shall mention this to the Abbé; remind me of it \*.

‘ I wish you to be always in the apartment, except at the hours in which the Abbé gives his lessons.

‘ The *public account* which the princes have been accustomed to give of *their sins* †, I suppress: you will be mindful of this injunction.

‘ As a favour I request you to make a Journal at two different periods in the day; the first during the Abbé’s lessons in the afternoon, and the second before you go to bed. In this Journal you will write every thing the princes say or do that is at all remarkable, whether it be good or bad, every thing you say or do yourself respecting them, and every thing worthy of observation that is said by others. The greatest proof of confidence I can give you is the charging you with this Journal; it requires all your veracity, and all the soundness of judgment which I know you to possess. In a work of

\* A preceptor, destitute of taste for the arts and ignorant of music, had thought proper to give his two pupils, princes of the blood royal, a music and singing master, with whom they were employed an hour and a half every day. And a woman, who was passionately fond of music, and had all her life cultivated this delightful art, not without success, deemed this study much too frivolous for men, and dismissed the music master.

† M. Bonnard and the Abbé Guyot had taken it into their heads to make the young princes, the last day of every week, confess their sins, in the presence of all the persons concerned in their education, and of the principal domestics, and at the confession of every sin, these tutors gave them a lecture. It will be seen that the Abbé carefully retained his taste for *sermonising*.

‘ this

‘ this nature, style demands no attention; accuracy and truth are the principal requisites; and above all things be not afraid of being too minute: minuteness is necessary when we speak of children of the age of our pupils. By writing at two different periods, your Journal will be the more faithful.

‘ I say nothing to you at present of what I could wish you to teach the princes, beside Geometry, because it is first necessary I should be informed what knowledge they have acquired.

‘ The following are the principal things for which you are to reprove them: for exaggeration and the use of outrée expressions, as *horrible, abominable, incredible*; be attentive also that they are not guilty of repetitions, and that they do not acquire habitual phrases.

‘ Reprove them for speaking too loud, or between their teeth. Correct the Duke de Valois of his habit of saying plain *yes* or *no*, or of answering only with a nod of the head. Do not suffer, on their part, the slightest degree of laughter when you reprove them. Let the tone of your reproof be mild, but extremely serious.

‘ Accustom them to be polite to every one, and complaisant to each other.

‘ Never overlook, in them, a single proverbial expression, or mode of speaking that is not perfectly clear and simple; as for instance when they say, *I have beat a march upon the door*, instead of I have knocked at it; *I have made a splotch*, for I have drawn

‘ badly, or my drawing is good for nothing;  
 ‘ *he is pot bellied*, for he is disproportionably  
 ‘ fat. These examples may suffice: you will  
 ‘ be careful not to pass over any thing of this  
 ‘ kind.

‘ In their recreations endeavour to make  
 ‘ them jump, and let them take as much  
 ‘ exercise as possible. Accustom them also to  
 ‘ run, and for that purpose run with them,  
 ‘ giving them the advantage of some distance.  
 ‘ At table let them help themselves: let them  
 ‘ have knives with blunt points: let them cut  
 ‘ their own meat: let the eldest cut his own  
 ‘ bread, &c.

‘ I entreat you to keep a dog, and to be  
 ‘ careful that it is always with them. You  
 ‘ need not say that it is to accustom the Duke  
 ‘ de Valois, who is afraid of dogs, to the  
 ‘ sight of them, but simply that you are fond  
 ‘ of dogs. Appear surprised at his timidity;  
 ‘ laugh at it, and add, that you are sure a  
 ‘ moment’s reflection will make him blush at  
 ‘ such weakness. As the dog will be always  
 ‘ in the room, you may accustom the Duke  
 ‘ to it by degrees, without his perceiving that  
 ‘ your intention is to cure him of his folly;  
 ‘ for you should seem to take it for granted  
 ‘ that, from the few words you have said,  
 ‘ he is no longer afraid of a dog. I hereby  
 ‘ furnish you with means of making him  
 ‘ courageous.

‘ The princes are to be punished for two  
 ‘ things only, of which I shall apprise the Ab-  
 ‘ bé Guyot: for *intentional disobedience*, and a  
 ‘ *falsehood persisted in*. These faults must never  
 ‘ be overlooked. The punishments shall be,  
 ‘ for the offender to dine without any other  
 ‘ com-



‘ company than that of the person who punish-  
 ‘ es him. After dinner he shall take his recre-  
 ‘ ation without his brother; and shall be plac-  
 ‘ ed in a closet, into which no person shall be  
 ‘ suffered to enter. I prohibit all the books  
 ‘ they read at present, and order that they may  
 ‘ never know where to get them. I shall tell  
 ‘ the Abbé Guyot to give them; till farther or-  
 ‘ ders, the following: Abbé Millot’s Histori-  
 ‘ cal Abridgments; Plays and Dialogues for  
 ‘ Children, by Madame de la Fitte, in 2 vo-  
 ‘ lumes; Robinson Crusoe; The Moral Play-  
 ‘ thing (*Les Hochets Moraux*), or Tales in  
 ‘ Verse, by M. Monget. When they have  
 ‘ read this last book, I wish them to learn two  
 ‘ of the tales by heart, the Prince and the  
 ‘ Menial (*le Prince & le Frotteur*), and that  
 ‘ entitled Theophilus.

‘ Twice a day you must read with them;  
 ‘ at one time the Historical Abridgments, at  
 ‘ the other, some one of the works I have  
 ‘ just enumerated; and endeavour to make  
 ‘ them reflect on what they read.

‘ I request you to read for your own im-  
 ‘ provement, *Emile; the Education of a Prince,*  
 ‘ by the Abbé Dugnet; and *Locke in English.*—  
 ‘ You will shew this paper to Monseigneur;  
 ‘ afterwards copy it, and return me the origi-  
 ‘ nal ||.’

I was presented to the princes by Monseig-  
 neur, who left me immediately to assume the

|| These instructions I gave to M. Lebrun, because he  
 was to spend some days with the princes at Paris without  
 me. I was at that time at Saint Cloud with Mademoi-  
 selle d’Orleans; her brothers were not brought to me till  
 several days after.

duties of my office †. I found with them the Abbé Guyot, with whom I had the conversation recommended to me by my instructions. He treated me with great civility; but it was easy to perceive how much he was chagrined by the changes that had taken place, and particularly his regret at having lost the chevalier de Bonnard, whom he highly extolled to me. He expressed his hopes that we should live upon good terms with each other; and I promised, on my part, to do every thing in my power to establish a mutual confidence and cordiality; without which the task of education we had undertaken could not but prove abortive.

I requested of him general information relative to every thing that concerned the princes. The Abbé said a great deal to me upon the subject, but in a desultory way, and wrote a note, in which he gave Madame de Genlis an account of the manner of spending every hour in the day. Believing that this would nearly answer her intentions, I was not pressing to see the note, as I shall be informed of its contents as soon as is necessary, according to the plan that Madame de Genlis has laid down.

During the four or five first days of my being in my office, I saw but little of the Abbé, who had affairs to attend to previous to his setting off for Saint Cloud. He left me to do the honours of the apartment, of which, no doubt, I should have acquitted myself awkwardly enough; but fortunately I saw scarcely any body.

† It is M. Lebrun who now speaks, after having recited the copy of my instructions.

I had no dog, Monseigneur having promised, by the time the princes returned to Saint Cloud, to give me one that should be gentle and familiar: but in a walk which they took with me and M. de Rochemont, I had an opportunity of observing how much the Duke de Valois was afraid of this animal, and I expressed to him my astonishment. I called the little dog, and patted it on the head; and, though the Duke always kept a little on one side to avoid it, he did not cry out, nor did we quicken our pace. I hope that he will be cured of this fear. We took a few turns in the Bois de Boulogne: I perceived that the Duke de Valois walked with his knees bent, for which I reproved him: but this habit will not be easily corrected; it was contracted imperceptibly, by wearing the sailor's dress, of which M. Vestris had already complained. Madame de Genlis has written to me upon this subject a letter, No. 1. which I shall keep, as well as every other that relates to the education of the princes. The taylor has been directed to remedy, as far as possible, the inconvenience of the sailor's dress.

On the 15th of January the Countess ordered me to get a pulley fixed in the hall where the princes study, for them to draw up weights: this was executed immediately, and a kind of semicircular barricado erected on the ground, that there might be no danger of the weights falling on their heads or that of any other person.

*Wednesday, 6 February 1782.*

.....

AFTER the first reading, after dinner, the two princes were standing engaged in conversation with me: the eldest was desirous of sitting in his brother's chair, which the latter would not permit: in an ill humoured manner he obliged him to rise, and sat down himself. The Duke de Valois, without persisting, gave him his seat, observing at the same time: 'I am certain M. Lebrun will not be pleased with this.' The Duke de Montpensier looked at me: I had laid aside the chearful countenance I wore an instant before; but before I had time to open my mouth, he rose and ran in tears to embrace his brother. This action which was perfectly spontaneous, moved me: I embraced him, saying, 'Your highness has committed a fault, you have acknowledged it, and you have as far as possible made reparation: I hope such a circumstance will never happen again.' He made no reply, but resumed his tranquillity, and we continued our conversation as before.

.....

I cannot avoid relating here a very extraordinary action of Mademoiselle de Chartres\*, relative to her sister Mademoiselle d'Orleans.

\* Now Mademoiselle d'Orleans. Her sister, who bore that name, died that day: the other only knew she was ill, and no play could divert her mind from the idea. It is difficult

d'Orleans. She was playing at a game of forfeits: it fell to her lot in one instance to decide what should be done for the recovery of a pledge, when, without being prompted by any one, she ordered the person to whom it belonged to pray to God for her sister d'Orleans. The impresson such an idea, in a child four years old, made on all present, may easily be conceived. For myself I know that I shall not forget it as long as I live.

Mademoiselle d'Orleans died this day between four and five o'clock.

---

*Thursday, 7 February 1782.*

AGREEABLY to the orders I received yesterday evening from Monseigneur, and from Madame de Genlis, to inform the young princes this morning of the death of their sister, I directed M. Prieur to tell them of it before their dinner, and to prepare them previously, by saying that she was extremely ill. He executed the order given him, and the princes were acquainted with her death before they were out of bed: the intelligence affected them; the younger prince wept, and the elder was dejected for some minutes. They were desired not to speak of this event either to Madame de

difficult to believe that a child four years old could for the space of two years retain a lively and profound grief for this loss: but that she did so every one about her can witness. The circumstance of the forfeit is mentioned by M. Lebrun, because I was at that time at Paris; for I no sooner learned the dangerous situation of a child so dear to me, than I departed from Saint Cloud, that I might nurse and take care of her.

Genli

Genlis or their sister: this they promised, and have kept their word. It even appeared that the impression did not remain long, as they engaged in play, with somewhat less noise, it is true, than usual, but seemingly with all their hearts ‡. . . . .

---

*Friday, 8 February 1782.*

**T**HIS morning, upon entering the apartment of the princes, I saw the eldest stroking a dog belonging to one of the valets de chambre: thus does his fear diminish, and I trust we shall reconcile him to animals of this species, however large may be their size.

---

*Wednesday, 13 February 1782.*

**T**HE Abbé and I have expressed our obligations to the Countess for the measures she has taken that we may have the use of the carriage to pay some visits, while the princes are at Belle Chasse.

---

*Wednesday, 27 February 1782.*

**I** ACCOMPANIED the Duke de Valois to the apartment of Madame de Genlis, where he said a thing that does him honour, and which

‡ Having been hitherto educated separately, they scarcely knew their sisters, and consequently had no love for them. But to the education that has united them all are they now indebted for the tenderness they mutually feel for each other, a tenderness that will be the charm of their lives.

I cannot



I cannot avoid relating. The Countess read to him an extract from the Life of the Duke of Burgundy, who, though he died at the age of nine years and a half, merited, by his conduct and the good qualities of which he gave promise, the attention of mankind, and that his actions should be recorded. The young prince was struck with the picture which this extract exhibited, and bursting into tears, he said to Madame de Genlis, *Nothing yet can be recorded of me.*

---

*Thursday, 28 February 1782.*

A LETTER in the *Journal de Paris*, on the subject of dogs which some people permit to run before their carriages at Paris, where it may occasion accidents, led us to talk of this strange caprice, which men of sense neither can nor ought to allow themselves.

---

*Saturday, 9 March 1782.*

THE English lesson was interrupted to-day, in order to go to the apartment of the Duke de Chartres †, where the Duke de Valois entered with a dog under his arm. Monseigneur was gone; but on his return he found the two princes playing with *Captain* and *Collette*. Collette had only been given to the princes at eight o'clock in the morning. Monseigneur was

† Now M. d'Orleans.

highly

highly pleased, and embraced his eldest son several times †. . . . .

The Duke de Valois seemed to derive satisfaction from the return of his Papa's favour. In going up stairs I heard the younger prince say to M. Prieur— *Provided my brother plays familiarly with Captain!* He was mortified; but they came down well pleased.

---

Saturday, 13 April 1782.

**DURING** the sitting of the Duke de Valois for his picture, he requested his brother to read to him some of the Select Histories, that he might not be tired: the younger refused upon the pretence that he should in that case be tired himself: the Duke urged him to it several times without being able to prevail; upon which I said to the Duke de Valois, that I would myself read to him what he desired, since his brother had not the complaisance, which one would naturally have expected from him without so many entreaties. I added, that it appeared to me very extraordinary that the Duke de Montpensier should be tired with the Select Histories, as they were by no means calculated to produce such an effect, and that he deserved in future whenever he should ask any favour to meet in like manner with a refusal. The child began to cry, or at least pretended

† Because he appeared to be cured of the strange fears of dogs which he had acquired by means of an improper education.

to do so: I said, that it was certainly because he felt himself in the wrong, and I read till the sitting of the Duke de Valois was at an end.

When it came to the turn of the Duke de Montpensier to sit, I shut the book: but I saw with extreme pleasure, that the Duke de Valois, of himself, and without the smallest hint from me, asked him what he would wish to have read. The child mentioned the book, and his brother read. I said to him, with an air of satisfaction, that it was by acting as he had just done, that we made others repent their want of civility and complaisance. I continued to treat the Duke de Montpensier with coldness till the time of our walk.

I ought not to forget, that, in consequence of my having done several little things which the Duke de Valois asked of me relative to his play-things, I observed that he assumed the tone of demanding such services. I determined to put a stop to this, and in the evening I had an opportunity of making him feel that this was not the way to succeed with me. He said to me with an air of authority, M. Lebrun, you must make me a key to-morrow morning. No, sir, I replied, I shall do no such thing; and I entreat you to remember that in this mode of asking you will never obtain any thing from me, or from any person else who is not under your commands, and even those who are will serve you with more zeal, punctuality and readiness, if you ask them with politeness and civility.

DURING

*Monday, 13 May 1782.*

**D**URING the time of recreation, the Duke de Valois, who is to perform to-morrow the part of Vasco de Gama, studied the short speech he is to make to the Samorin of Calicut\*.

*Sunday, 23 June 1782,*

On returning from mass, the Duke de Valois merited from the Countess at dinner the remission of three remaining days of penance. She had forgotten his situation, and was dividing some strawberries between the two princes and Mademoiselle; though there was company at dinner, he said to his friend, that she need only divide them into two portions, as he was doing penance. She was pleased with the honesty of the proceeding, and pardoned him, praising him at the same time for what he had just done.

*Friday, 26 July 1782.*

**A**FTER the lesson, the Countess having related the history of Madame de Salency's

\* I had contrived to make them act in the gardens, during their walks, some interesting passages taken from De la Harpe's Abridgment of the History of Voyages. The parts were performed by themselves and the rest of the family. The scene being a large garden in the English style, a river and boats represented the sea and ships, harbours, hastily constructed by the children, the huts of savages; and in this manner we acted several voyages; among others those of *Kasco, Snelgrave, de Brue, &c.*

femme

femme de chambre, the Duke de Valois was affected by it, and said, he was sorry that he was not older. The Countess asked him why: he replied, that, if he were his own master, he would bestow a pension on that charitable and virtuous girl. The Countess told him that, if he were to ask his papa, the pension would perhaps be granted. He ran down instantly, made the request and obtained it; and the Duke de Chartres was so touched with this mark of benevolence that he mingled his tears with those of his son. The Duke de Valois was extolled for his sensibility, and the praises he received will unquestionably produce on his pure and artless mind, an impression that will not soon be effaced\*.

---

*Friday, 23 August 1782.*

**I**N our morning walk the Duke de Valois fixed to different trees in the garden labels given him by the gardener without telling him to which they belonged; he mistook in some instances, but he succeeded in a great number. These cards would be very serviceable to persons learning the various kinds of trees, if the wind or the rain did not soon destroy them; they should be made of tin, and the names painted in black: this may be practised next year.

\* This incident I have related at length in the *Tales of the Castle*, without naming the young prince. See the *History of Marianne Rambour* (vol. i. p. 137, third edition.) The Duke de Valois obtained from his father a pension of six hundred livres.

*Friday, 11 October 1782.*

AT half after eleven we set off for Belle Chasse, without acquainting the princes with the object we had in view, that the Countess might have the pleasure of informing them herself, which she did on the road. The princes thanked her with caresses. We entered the Hôtel de la Force \*, and I observed with pleasure in the young princes an air of seriousness and sensibility which proved the goodness of their hearts. We visited the cells of fifteen prisoners, whom we set at liberty; and the princes, before they were released, gave them a louis each, for the support of their families. We were all affected by the respectful manner in which these poor unhappy beings were regarded by the princes.

We had set down the Countess at Belle Chasse, and on our return to the Palais Royal, the conversation turned upon the action that had just passed, which afforded me an opportunity of introducing a reflection upon the slight instance of hastiness of temper displayed yesterday evening by the Duke de Valois. I said to him: ‘ Your Highness  
 ‘ has just done a good action, and made a  
 ‘ number of beings happy. They were stran-  
 ‘ gers to you: with how much greater reason  
 ‘ may those about you expect you to contri-  
 ‘ bute to their happiness by the gentleness  
 ‘ and civility of your language and deport-  
 ‘ ment? If you suffer yourself to be hasty,  
 ‘ remember that, though the Duke of Bur-

\* A sort of Bridewell. T.



'gundy was equally so, he became the most  
'gentle and affable child in the world.' The  
prince shed a few tears; we embraced, and  
no more was said. . . . .

---

*Tuesday, 29 October 1782.*

**I** TOLD the Duke de Valois, that he might  
read in Don Quixotte. This occasioned a  
slight degree of altercation between the two  
brothers. The younger was in the wrong:  
I desired the Duke de Valois to proceed, and  
let his brother pout by himself in the *Petite  
Maison* \*. He remained there, began to cry,  
and, after half a quarter of an hour, his brother  
went to him and returned to tell me,  
that he (the Duke de Montpensier) was extremely  
sorry, and very much wished I would  
lay aside the air of severity I had assumed.  
I represented to him the impropriety of the  
ill humour he continually displayed on the  
least contradiction: he embraced the Duke  
de Valois, who was charmed to see harmony  
re-established. . . . .

---

*Friday, 1 November 1782.*

**AT** ten o'clock, when the Abbé was about  
to explain the Catechism, and while I was  
gone to my own apartment, a trifling dispute  
arose respecting a stone to be placed in the  
temple which the princes were re-building:  
it was interrupted by their being called to

\* A small closet with glass windows which they had in  
their chamber, and which they called by this name.

their

their lesson, and during the lesson the Duke de Valois requested the Abbé's permission to whisper something to his brother. He was to confess after mass, and the Abbé readily guessed what he wanted to say, and gave him leave. He had no sooner said a few words in his ear, than the little one ardently embraced his brother, and they both burst into tears. The Abbé embraced this opportunity of reminding them of their little quarrels, which frequently made them uneasy, and exhorted them to be more indulgent and accommodating to each other: they mutually acknowledged their fault; and we saw with pleasure the happy effect it produced. . . . .

---

*Thursday, 23 January 1783.*

**R**ETURNING at a quarter before twelve from a promenade with the Count de Beaujolais and his brother, the postillion rode against a man about sixty years of age, tolerably corpulent, by which he was thrown down: fortunately the coachman stopped his horses in time, and the man was not hurt. He was lifted up by the footmen, and conducted into a house: we remained till we were sure that he had received no injury. The two princes appeared to feel properly on the occasion.

*Note of Madame de Genlis.*

‘ TWELVE livres should have been given  
 ‘ to the man, if he were a person whom such  
 ‘ an offer would not affront; if he were above  
 ‘ receiving money, his address should have  
 ‘ been

‘ been procured, and enquiries made the next  
‘ day in the name of the princes respecting his  
‘ health: the princes ought also to have quit-  
‘ ted their carriage, and should have gone  
‘ themselves into the house, to see in what  
‘ state the man was.”

---

*Wednesday, 13 March 1783.*

AT a quarter after six we examined the engravings given by the Duke de Penthièvre, and read an account of the lives of the great Condé, of the Regent, the Dauphin, and Louis XV. When we had finished our reading, the Duke de Valois, pointing to the Dictionary of Illustrious Men, said that he would so act as to have a place in that book. We applauded his virtuous desire. . . .

---

*Tuesday, 13 May 1783.*

A LETTER was brought me from a woman, complaining that she had been thrown down by the carriage of the princes this morning, and that she was confined to her bed by the bruises she had received. We knew nothing of the accident, as the coachman did not stop; and I have reprimanded the footmen for not informing us of it at the time, that assistance might have been given. In answer to the woman's letter, I sent word that some person should call on her according to the address she had indicated. M. de Saint  
Martin

Martin not being at home when the letter was brought, we have requested him to visit her early to-morrow morning; and on his return, M. Pricur will carry her assistance and compensation as may be found just.

*Note of Madame de Genlis.*

‘ IT is inconceivable how a woman could be thrown down without any one perceiving it. The servants should have the most positive orders to stop the instant an accident happens, though it were less considerable than the present. This is the second in one year; and nothing of the kind has happened to me in the space of eighteen years. The servants must certainly be in fault. It will be necessary to speak to them sharply upon this subject, and, I repeat it, to insist upon their stopping on the slightest accident, and give assistance though they were not the cause of it. I made them do this the other day, when we met with a carriage overturned, and the Duke de Valois sent to offer his services. They must be perfectly accustomed to such proceedings.’

---

*Sunday, 18 May 1783.*

*Note of Madame de Genlis.*

‘ **M.** LEBRUN will inform the Duke de Valois, that when he (M. Lebrun) or the Abbé shall have pardoned any fault, I shall never inflict a punishment, and that I shall not hesitate to pardon even a fault committed

‘ted to me, if M. Lebrun or the Abbé desire  
‘it. Thus the princes ought to feel that,  
‘as I frequently repeat to them, they have  
‘as much interest in giving satisfaction to  
‘the Abbé and M. Lebrun, as to myself,  
‘because we have all an equal authority over  
‘them.’

---

*Tuesday, 17 June 1783.*

THE princes on their return home rested themselves till eight o’clock, when I conducted them to the Countess.

*Note of Madame de Genlis.*

‘I DO not like these restings; they must  
‘not be accustomed to regard total idleness  
‘as necessary repose: beside they ought not  
‘to be fatigued with an hour’s walk. They  
‘should never remain, even for six minutes,  
‘without doing something. They might have  
‘employed this quarter of an hour in playing  
‘at chess, or at heraldry, or repeating terms  
‘of architecture, or lastly in reading. In a  
‘word, there should never be two minutes,  
‘nor even *one* of idleness.’ . . . . .  
. . . . .

---

*Sunday, 7 September 1783.*

*Note of Madame de Genlis.*

‘I HAVE told the Duke de Valois that I  
‘would desire M. Lebrun in future to dou-  
‘ble

' ble the punishment, whenever the slightest  
' murmur shall escape the Duke as to any  
' penance inflicted by M. Lebrun.'

---

*Thursday, 9 October 1783.*

*Note of Madame de Genlis.*

' I HAVE assured the Duke de Valois that  
' he shall be punished if he do not get the  
' better of his silly timidity. I am very much  
' displeased with the manner in which he  
' received the Duchesse de Bourbon. When  
' we see an aunt after a long absence, we  
' ought to shew the liveliest demonstrations  
' of joy: the princes have endeavoured to-  
' day to repair their fault, but not suffici-  
' ently. If between this and Sunday they do  
' not again see the Duchesse de Bourbon and  
' Princess de Lamballe, either here or at  
' their own houses, and do not testify a be-  
' coming joy by a frank and cheerful air, say-  
' ing civil things, answering them with a good  
' grace, &c. I will not take them to the play  
' on Sunday. M Lebrun will be so good as  
' to read to them this article.'

---

*Tuesday, 30 December 1783.*

*Note of Madame de Genlis.*

' ON new year's day the princes will pay  
' visits to the Countess de Pont and Madame  
' Desrois, beside those to the princes: if  
' Madame



‘ Madame Desfrois be not at Paris, they will  
‘ write to her \*.

---

Monday, 2 August 1784.

WHILE I was dressing in the evening, a message was sent me from the Countess, desiring me not to take the princes into the upper part of the garden, as there were precipices there. I could have wished this had been said to me privately, and not before the valets de chambre, or the princes, who may suppose that I am inattentive to such dangers when I take them out, which is calculated to diminish the confidence they ought to place in me†. I have already observed in several instances, that, when I have desired them to do a thing, they have hesitated, and have asked me if their friend had directed it. The Countess must be sensible of what importance it is they should be persuaded that I do nothing but in concert with her; and I therefore beg of her, at all times, seemingly to approve of what I do, even though she should feel differently: on her mentioning it to me

\* It may be seen from this Journal, as well as from my own, how ardently I desired that they should entertain proper sentiments towards those whom they were bound to love.

† These precipices were very deep holes which had been lately made; I knew nothing of the circumstance till the evening; and as the children rose before me, I was desirous of acquainting M Lebrun with it before I went to bed, certainly not imagiuing that so simple a caution could be construed into an offence. But such are the things which these gentlemen style *my ill treatment of them*.

in private, I would correct my conduct, and act otherwise.

*Note of Madame de Genlis.*

‘ THIS is an instance of susceptibility that  
 ‘ I could not have suspected. As precipices  
 ‘ level with the surface of the ground are not  
 ‘ seen at the distance of ten steps, I had no  
 ‘ reason to suppose that, by informing M.  
 ‘ Lebrun of them, it was possible to diminish  
 ‘ the respect which the princes ought to feel  
 ‘ for him. As they are not infants, whom it  
 ‘ is necessary always to lead by the hand,  
 ‘ they might run on before him, and the cau-  
 ‘ tion was as simple as it was useful. Since  
 ‘ the moment that the princes were entrusted  
 ‘ to me, I have never neglected a single op-  
 ‘ portunity of increasing their confidence in  
 ‘ M. Lebrun, and of shewing him, before the  
 ‘ princes and other persons, all the respect  
 ‘ he merits, both on his own account, and  
 ‘ from the nature of his situation\*. This  
 ‘ punctilious reproach therefore, on the part  
 ‘ of M. Lebrun, friendship might take offence  
 ‘ at, and it is certainly a violation of justice.  
 ‘ If the princes have an appearance of doubt  
 ‘ and hesitation when M. Lebrun tells them  
 ‘ any thing, it is new to me, and I have done  
 ‘ nothing that can at all have occasioned it.’

. . . . .  
 An attempt has been made at Saint Leu,  
 to give the princes some notion of the sphere;  
 but it was soon found that such abstract sci-

\* As may be seen from this Journal, and from my private one.

ence was premature: they were eager, therefore, to return to the earth, and will not again mount the skies till their minds are sufficiently formed to follow, without difficulty, the real or apparent motions of those enormous bodies which revolve in the immensity of space in a manner that the diversity of their marvellous revolutions is not less striking than their regularity\*.

---

*Note of Madame de Genlis.*

‘**R**ESPECTING whatever relates to the education of the princes, I request that M. Lebrun will in no case give me a verbal account. It is one of my reasons for instituting this Journal, which will be a faithful record of the manner in which we have mutually conducted ourselves, and will, I hope, do honour to us both.’

---

*Note of Madame de Genlis.*

‘**T**HE privation of the dessert is a mode of punishment which I have hitherto approved and advised; it was natural therefore that the Abbé should employ it on the present occasion. But I have reflected that the Duke de Valois being in his twelfth

\* This paragraph was not written by M. Lebrun, whose style, as the reader must have observed, has nothing of this strange affectation: it is a *poetical flight* of the Abbé Guyot, who has enriched the Journal with various fragments in the same strain:

' year, such punishments, calculated to pro-  
 ' long his infancy, and which might now  
 ' debase his mind, ought no longer to be  
 ' continued. Prohibiting him from going to  
 ' a play, depriving him of an agreeable party,  
 ' and treating him with distance and gravity,  
 ' are punishments more suitable to him at  
 ' present. We must also begin to let him  
 ' have a little more liberty in things that are  
 ' not inconvenient, and dispense altogether  
 ' with his asking leave, either of the Abbé,  
 ' or M. Lebrun, or of me, respecting a thou-  
 ' sand trifles; as for instance, if he wished to  
 ' lend a book, or any thing else of this kind  
 ' (which he did not immediately want him-  
 ' self), to a proper person, he should have  
 ' the power of doing it without asking per-  
 ' mission; and he need only say, that he has  
 ' lent such a thing for a certain time. Here-  
 ' after also, when he has behaved so as to  
 ' give satisfaction, he should be permitted to  
 ' choose the place of promenade, with the  
 ' consent however of his brother, and observ-  
 ' ing the necessary precautions respecting the  
 ' horses. He will himself give orders to the  
 ' footmen and coachman, as to these airings,  
 ' when he gets into the carriage. It is to be  
 ' understood, that he must not be allowed to  
 ' be deficient in complaisance to his brother,  
 ' or to oppose any representations which may  
 ' be made relative to the horses. For the  
 ' future, his valets de chambre shall every  
 ' evening take his orders in person, and ask  
 ' him if he has any commissions for the next  
 ' morning, enquiries concerning any person's  
 ' health, cards, billets, &c. If he say no,  
 ' when he ought to have given some message,  
 ' the

‘ the gentlemen will in that case rebuke him,  
 ‘ and make him sensible of his inattention. I  
 ‘ beg that this rule may be accurately ob-  
 ‘ served. The gentlemen will inform him of  
 ‘ it, adding that the change is adopted, be-  
 ‘ cause he is in the twelfth year of his age,  
 ‘ and that we have all three determined upon  
 ‘ it by common consent; but that, if his con-  
 ‘ duct shall be such as to deserve the forfeiture  
 ‘ of this distinction, he shall once again be  
 ‘ treated like an infant \*.

.....  
 This multiplicity of minute circumstances,  
 incessantly repeated, of which it is impossible  
 for those who have not practised them to have  
 an idea†, requires extreme patience: but it  
 is the essential characteristic of zeal, and  
 justice authorises me to confess, that I am  
 greatly encouraged by the example of the  
 director of the education‡, by that of M.  
 Lebrun, and above all, by the happy dispo-  
 sitions of the princes, by their incomparable  
 docility, and, lastly, by their uniform and  
 persevering emulation, qualities which, af-  
 fording certain hopes of success, give the co-  
 operators in their instruction to enjoy before-

\* I dare affirm that there is nothing in these ideas but  
 what is reasonable, though these gentlemen were extremely  
 mortified at them. They saw in them *the loss of their antho-  
 rity*; and I was obliged on this subject to encounter com-  
 plaints, discontent and remonstrances, without end, of  
 which I shall quote only a part; for if I were to relate  
 every thing of this sort, I should weary the reader almost  
 as much as I was wearied myself.

† This note also is written by the Abbé Guyot, who here  
 alludes to his teaching the Latin Language.

‡ A compliment for me.

hand the most pleasing recompense with which they can possibly be gratified.

---

*Monday, 10 January 1785.*

*Note of Madame de Genlis.*

I SHALL here reply to a small article in the Journal, which I had not time to answer when I read it. It relates to the liberty I have given the Duke de Valois. I have been surpris'd at the apologies made by M. Lebrun on this subject, who, among other things, says: *The princes might have assured you that it has never been our desire to thwart them.* I have in no case, either in conversation, or in writing, supposed that either M. Lebrun or the Abbé wished to thwart the princes: had I entertained such an idea, I should have told these gentlemen so in express terms, with whom no interest could induce me to act in an indirect manner: the journal is a testimony of what I have said on this subject. As the idea appeared to me a good one, I read the article to the Duke and Duchess de Chartres, to whom it did not suggest the most distant imagination that my design was to counteract any opposition in these gentlemen, who had never been mentioned by me, but that I might praise their zeal and punctuality. Monseigneur and Madame conceived instantly, which was natural enough, that my intention was to draw the Duke de Valois out of a state of infancy;



‘ fancy; to inspire him gradually with greater  
‘ manliness of character; to accustom him to  
‘ think for himself, and to behave towards  
‘ his attendants with gentleness, or with firm-  
‘ ness, when firmness shall be necessary; to  
‘ afford him opportunities of practising that  
‘ decorum and attention to others, which  
‘ might lead them to feel the more obliged  
‘ to him, as knowing that the letters he  
‘ wrote, the enquiries he made, and every  
‘ instance of civility and politeness on his  
‘ part, were perfectly voluntary. Monseigneur  
‘ and Madame conceived also the change  
‘ to be desirable, as it furnished the means of  
‘ inflicting on the Duke de Valois punish-  
‘ ments suitable to his age, and likely to  
‘ make a deeper impression, because when  
‘ his governors shall be dissatisfied with his  
‘ conduct, they may deprive him of this li-  
‘ berty, and again treat him like a child;  
‘ that moreover it would be an object of  
‘ emulation for his brother (for I have only  
‘ granted this trifling degree of liberty to  
‘ the eldest), who will think that, by behav-  
‘ ing well, he also shall obtain the privilege  
‘ of being treated as a young man; that the  
‘ place of promenade being left to the deci-  
‘ sion of the Duke de Valois would afford  
‘ daily occasions of exercising his complai-  
‘ sance to his brother, which must necessarily  
‘ induce his brother to be complaisant in re-  
‘ turn. In fine, the Duke and Duchess de  
‘ Chartres highly approved of the alteration,  
‘ and wanted no explanation to enable them  
‘ to comprehend all the advantages that  
‘ might be derived from it. I will add,

' without ceremony, that if M. Lebrun had  
 ' taken the trouble to read what I have writ-  
 ' ten, free from the prepossession he con-  
 ' stantly feels, that I seek to find fault, and  
 ' to controul indirectly upon every occasion,  
 ' this long commentary would have been un-  
 ' necessary. I have neither caprice, nor pre-  
 ' judice, nor ill humour, of which this Jour-  
 ' nal is a proof. I will never suffer an op-  
 ' portunity to escape of doing justice to the  
 ' gentlemen in question. I will ever em-  
 ' brace, as I have hitherto done, all possible  
 ' occasions of obliging them, and of pro-  
 ' curing them all those little conveniencies  
 ' that may render their situations pleasant,  
 ' and to which they have not the claim of  
 ' right. If I imagine that I perceive in their  
 ' conduct, as tutors, any thing I cannot ap-  
 ' prove, I will mention it to them with be-  
 ' coming delicacy, and with all the frank-  
 ' ness which my office and the nature of  
 ' the business shall demand; and I ardent-  
 ' ly desire that they will in future see in  
 ' what I write nothing more than the words  
 ' express.'

---

*Wednesday, 12 January 1785.*

*Note of Madame de Genlis.*

• I KNOW not why it should appear to M.  
 ' Lebrun that I am not satisfied. Is it be-  
 ' cause I ask to see the cook's journal? It is  
 ' my duty to do so, as Monseigneur has given  
 ' me

‘ me the superintendance of the expen-  
 ‘ ture. Is it because I compare its expence  
 ‘ with ours? This is the only way in which  
 ‘ I can form a judgment of it. Is it because  
 ‘ I have told M. Lebrun that I would give  
 ‘ him some instructions upon that head? It  
 ‘ was what he himself desired, as he was  
 ‘ by no means, he said, competent to the  
 ‘ business. Thus, supposing the expence not  
 ‘ to have been well managed, which I al-  
 ‘ ready perceive to be the case, M. Lebrun  
 ‘ has nothing disagreeable to apprehend;  
 ‘ no blame can fall upon him, his zeal is un-  
 ‘ questionable, and it is not my character to  
 ‘ blame unjustly.’

---

Monday, 17 January 1785.

*Note of Madame de Genlis.*

‘ IF I frequently speak of economy, it is  
 ‘ certainly no more than I have a right to  
 ‘ do; for five years and a half have I set the  
 ‘ example. I am well aware that low and  
 ‘ narrow minds may say, *that it is beneath*  
 ‘ *the dignity of a prince* to establish such eco-  
 ‘ nomy in his house: but those who think  
 ‘ justly, know that economy is a very estima-  
 ‘ ble virtue, when it is not our own money  
 ‘ of which we are sparing; and that without  
 ‘ economy it is impossible to be noble and  
 ‘ beneficent. As long as the princes are  
 ‘ under my care, there shall neither be dis-  
 ‘ order, dissipation, nor magnificence in their  
 O 5 ‘ house;

' house; and it is only by the observance of  
 ' this rule that I shall be enabled to make  
 ' them do, or to do in their name, good  
 ' actions; that I can give them the power of  
 ' liberating prisoners, of assisting a poor  
 ' paralytic woman\*, and a number of other  
 ' unfortunate beings. It is thus only I can  
 ' enable them to give ten louis for a box at  
 ' the theatre, though they have one of their  
 ' own, when an author permits his play to be  
 ' acted for the benefit of the poor†, and  
 ' that I can in their name administer succour  
 ' to their sick servants, as I did last autumn  
 ' in the case of Berniere, Mademoiselle's foot-  
 ' man, to whom riding on horseback was pre-  
 ' scribed for the space of three months.  
 ' Mademoiselle paid the hire of a horse dur-  
 ' ing the whole time; she also gave twenty  
 ' louis to poor Darnal, that he may have the  
 ' satisfaction of dying in the arms of his fa-  
 ' ther and mother, who live at the distance of  
 ' two hundred leagues. These are actions  
 ' that I could wish them to be able to per-  
 ' form, though I would at the same time  
 ' spare nothing that could at all contribute to  
 ' their instruction: but how are they to per-  
 ' form them without the constant and strict  
 ' observance of economy? It is requisite that  
 ' we shew ourselves worthy of the confidence  
 ' with which we are honoured by the Duke  
 ' de Chartres, by rendering his children  
 ' good, amiable and virtuous, by cultivating  
 ' in them agreeable talents, and extensive and

\* Madame Busca.

† Coriolanus.

‘ solid knowledge. Such should be our aim,  
‘ and the constant object of our united cares;  
‘ but without economy this cannot possibly be  
‘ attained.’

---

*Thursday, 20 January 1785.*

*Note of Madame de Genlis.*

‘ I DO not in the least recollect having told  
‘ the Duke de Montpensier, that he might  
‘ purchase things without asking leave; but I  
‘ remember, on the contrary, to have told  
‘ him that, as he had not behaved properly  
‘ to M. Lebrun, he should not have that per-  
‘ mission, and that one of the principal things  
‘ which would lead me to consider him as  
‘ having quitted a state of infancy would  
‘ be his gentleness, docility, and respect to-  
‘ wards the Abt  and M. Lebrun, and the  
‘ proofs he should give them of friend-  
‘ ship and gratitude for their cares. I re-  
‘ quest M. Lebrun to read to him this ar-  
‘ ticle.

---

*Tuesday, 25 January 1785.*

.....  
‘ AS to *preserves*\*, or what I have called  
‘ so, they are merely baked pears and apples

\* I had forbidden the giving to the princes preserves, and many other things of a similar nature; and having observed in the Journal that they had eaten preserves, I had expressed my disapprobation, which gave occasion to this reply from M. Lebrun.

dressed

‘ dressed in steam and with a little sugar. I considered them as rather economical than otherwise, and supposed I was giving the princes a very wholesome sort of regale.

*Note of Madame de Genlis.*

‘ IF what M. Lebrun calls *preserves* were not *preserves*, my remark was undoubtedly useless; but that was a circumstance I could not divine. I have farther to add, that if the *baked pears* he mentions were really baked pears, and that this is not also a name given at hazard, it is the most unwholesome food, and the most difficult of digestion, that a person of any age can possibly take.

‘ As to the *almost total separation* between the gentlemen and me, I shall answer that reproach also, and have done with the subject altogether. When I took charge of the education of the princes, I was sensible of what advantage it would be to me to possess the friendship of the persons who were to assist in it. Certain that I should never be able to overcome the discontent of M. Bonnard, who lost six months of the preceding year in entertaining his friends at Saint Cloud, inviting them to dinner every day, and leaving all the duties of his office to M. Prieur, as is proved by a paper in my possession, written by the Abbé Guyot, giving an account of the manner in which the princes employed their time, where the name of M. Prieur continually occurs, M. Bonnard’s not once—Certain, I say, that it  
‘ would



‘ would be impossible to surmount the high  
 ‘ pretensions, ridiculous envy and pride of  
 ‘ M. Bonnard, I wished him to resign,  
 ‘ though he was desirous of retaining his  
 ‘ place. I signified to him my wish, and, to  
 ‘ induce his compliance, I assured him that  
 ‘ he should be still more amply rewarded  
 ‘ than M. de Foncecagne had been, though  
 ‘ the latter had completed his task of educa-  
 ‘ tion. In fact, M. de Foncecagne had an  
 ‘ apartment, and an annuity for life of fifteen  
 ‘ hundred livres, and was satisfied; the re-  
 ‘ compense of M. Bonnard, beside his apart-  
 ‘ ment, the furniture of which I chose my-  
 ‘ self from the *garde meuble* of the Duke de  
 ‘ Chartres, was the cross of Saint Louis, a  
 ‘ colonel’s commission, the fortune of his wife  
 ‘ insured, and a pension of five hundred  
 ‘ livres; and yet he retired in rage, my ir-  
 ‘ reconcilable enemy \*. As to the Abbé  
 ‘ Guyot,

\* Such was my conduct to the late M. Bonnard: these are incontestable facts, and the Abbé Guyot, who read this Journal, and frequently wrote in it, never denied a syllable of them, because it was impossible. M. Bonnard was beside indebted to me for his introduction at the Palais Royal. M. de Buffon spoke of him to me in terms of the warmest friendship, and requested me to solicit the place of sub-governor to the princes: I did so, with readiness and zeal, and I succeeded. Thus M. Bonnard owed to me his military promotion, his marriage, and his fortune; for he obtained nothing but by addressing himself directly to me, and by my solicitation alone. The only reproach he could ever make me, was the consenting to take upon myself the charge of the children which friendship was desirous of entrusting to me. The appointment of a governor was what he expected, and he saw the period approach without uneasiness; but he could not bear the idea of being under the direction of a woman; he forgot that this woman had given proofs of some talents for education

‘ Guyot, I thought that the benefits I had  
 ‘ heaped on his friend would at least give  
 ‘ him a good opinion of my disposition. I  
 ‘ perceived in him a considerable share of  
 ‘ ill humour, no just idea of education, no  
 ‘ knowledge of the children; but I imagined  
 ‘ that by civility and kindness I should ac-

education (the *Théâtre of Education*, and *Adela and Theodore* were already published), and in fine, that this woman was his benefactress and his friend. I offered to continue him in his place; in the mean time I did not conceal from him that he should lead a very austere life, and that the plan I should lay down must be followed with the most scrupulous exactness. I assured him that, if he resigned, he should be treated better than he could have hoped, had he even completed the task of education with the most brilliant success. He resigned; I prevailed on M. D’Orleans to do for him what I have stated above, and M. Bonnard would from that moment never set his foot within my doors. Since his death however, his family have had recourse to me in behalf of the two children he left; and M. d’Orleans has granted them, in consequence of my urgent solicitations, a pension of six hundred livres. In short, after M. Bonnard’s resignation, I had the happiness to render some services to one of his relations, the one too whom he most loved, M. de Broval, whose virtues and talents have a just claim to esteem. Notwithstanding M. de Broval’s tender friendship for M. Bonnard, he will pardon, I trust, these complaints, founded upon indisputable facts, with the truth of which he is perfectly acquainted. In confirmation of them I have all the letters of M. de Buffon; that great man, offended at M. Bonnard’s ingratitude, strongly reproached him for his conduct, and refused ever after to see him. Meanwhile M. Garat (so estimable both for his principles and his talents) has asserted, in a eulogium on the character of M. Bonnard, *that I had done him the greatest injustice*. How can this distinguished writer justify to himself such an attack on a person whom he does not know? When we accuse in this positive manner without certain evidence, do we not hazard the being chargeable with calumny? This question I submit to M. Garat himself. My esteem for his character persuades me that he will be sorry for what he has done.

‘ quire

quire his friendship, and this point gained,  
I saw no other difficulty, especially as I  
then believed myself certain of finding in  
the person who was to succeed M. Bonnard,  
a firm and true friend: and I had every  
reason to flatter myself with this hope.  
During the whole of the first journey to  
Saint Cloud, I was solely occupied with the  
care of ingratiating myself with the Abbé:  
after supper I staid in the saloon till mid-  
night, talking or rather listening to him,  
with a sincere desire of pleasing and render-  
ing my company agreeable to him; my  
mother also invited him to her apartment  
in the afternoon, to tell him how ardently  
I wished for his friendship. When I left  
Saint Cloud I told both the Abbé and M.  
Lebrun, that, though I admitted none but  
my own family to dine with me at Belle  
Chasse; I excepted them, whom I wished  
henceforth to consider as forming a part of  
it, and I hoped that they would favour us  
with their company in turns, as it would  
not be necessary every day for them both  
to dine with the princes\*. Meanwhile on  
their arrival at Paris neither of them came  
to Belle Chasse, except to conduct the  
princes thither. I had requested M. Le-  
brun, when he had occasion to write to  
me, to lay aside ceremony, which ill ac-  
corded with the friendship I wished to see  
established between us; and on a sudden,

\* The princes at that time continued to dine in their apartment at the Palais Royal, and were not brought to me till after their dinner.

\* without

without explanation, without quarrel, without the slightest cause, he again assumed the air and tone of the coldest reserve, and in his letters to me observed all the old formality and punctilio which I had prevailed on him to avoid. Still I was not disheartened; we set off for Saint Leu, and I pursue my plan with perseverance. I take but one meal a day; yet, to be more in company with these gentlemen, I go down to dinner and supper with them; every evening I remain at table till eleven o'clock; forced by my health to keep my chamber for a fortnight, I request them to come and sup with my family in our most private retirement. I suffer no opportunity to escape of praising them before the Duke de Chartres, and of increasing his esteem for them. To the Abbé I show, unsolicited, the most lively concern for his interest and welfare, entreating the Duke de Chartres to obtain a pension for him from the Bishop of Autun; the Abbé has been informed by me of every thing that has passed upon this subject: on the other hand, to the young princes, I talk of nothing but obedience and gratitude they owe to these gentlemen, and I punish them severely for the least failure in this respect. I give the gentlemen an unbounded authority over them. In fine, every means I could devise, cares, attentions, demonstrations of friendship, and a desire to live upon terms of familiarity with them, were employed with a patience and assiduity that astonished all who were witnesses of so many advances being thrown away.

away. At length, seeing their coldness and ill humour still subsist, and their pretensions increase, I have recourse to explanations; I express particularly to M. Lebrun the utmost sorrow, and the truest friendship. To these he appeared sensible, and I found no difficulty in forgetting what had passed; but after two days, I perceived again the same dissimulation, the same constraint, the same coldness, and the same irritability. As to the Abbé, a slave to insuperable peevishness, he continually adds rudeness to caprice, and no longer opening his mouth at table but to eat, observes a disdainful silence accompanied with an air so extraordinary, that my presence and authority is sometimes necessary to keep my eldest daughter particularly from bursting into peals of laughter during the whole time of supper. Beside my mother and my daughters, the good and honest Moncigny has beheld all the particulars of this strange conduct with inexpressible surprise: notwithstanding his conciliatory disposition, he could not refrain from telling me a thousand times, that such behaviour was insupportable; he spoke of it in terms of asperity to the Abbé, and could not conceal from me the indignation he felt at these conversations. In fine, I lose every hope of gaining the friendship of these gentlemen; but I lose it without experiencing enmity, without displaying any ill humour, and determined to serve and oblige them as often as possible, even without their knowing it, which I have already had an opportunity  
of



‘ of doing as to one of them; determined  
‘ also ever to behave to them not only with  
‘ that attention which is their due, but with  
‘ that from which our respective situations  
‘ would naturally excuse me without any  
‘ breach of the strictest politeness. For ex-  
‘ ample, when the princes are with me, and  
‘ ceremony is out of the question, the gen-  
‘ tlemen are totally useless to them, and I  
‘ might have them alone without the least in-  
‘ civility: yet I invite the Abbé and M. Le-  
‘ brun to dinner on Sunday, though I have  
‘ on this occasion an additional excuse for  
‘ dispensing with their company, since, ac-  
‘ cording to the rules of etiquette, if these  
‘ gentlemen are permitted to eat with their  
‘ pupils, they have no such right with Made-  
‘ moiselle. It is true that I observe not this  
‘ etiquette respecting two or three other per-  
‘ sons; but as it is a favour, it would be na-  
‘ tural that I should grant it only to my  
‘ friends, and friendship alone can lay  
‘ claim to such exceptions. Beside I fre-  
‘ quently take M. Lebrun to the play with  
‘ the princes, and I have offered him the  
‘ box for himself, when it has not been dis-  
‘ posed of by Monseigneur. I am under no  
‘ obligation to do any of these things; for  
‘ though there are no bounds to the duties  
‘ of friendship, those of politeness are very  
‘ limited: I will add however that limited  
‘ and simple as they are, they have not been  
‘ observed by the Abbé Guyot. I will only  
‘ mention one instance which every person at  
‘ Belle Chasse has witnessed. When the  
‘ Abbé comes to take the princes, he never  
‘ approaches



approaches or speaks a word to me, which may be natural enough, as I am playing on the harp\*: but my mother plays on no instrument, and is neither engaged in reading nor in writing. Without being much conversant with the world, he might know that it would be proper on entering the apartment to go up to her and ask her how she did. The Abbé has some confused notion of this politeness, and seldom neglects to observe it when there is a stranger in the academy; but otherwise he does not approach her chair oftener than once a month. His daily practice is to salute my mother by walking up to the fire place, where he remains his ten or twelve minutes without saying a word or even looking at her. It is impossible that such rudeness should not at last be noticed even by children, who constantly see a different behaviour in M. Lebrun and M. Mariottini; and I have in reality been obliged to impose silence on them respecting this strange proceeding of the Abbé, with which they diverted themselves by laying wagers with one another *whether he would or would not wish my mother a good night*. I put a stop to this raillery the moment I was acquainted with it: and this is all I can do; for it is impossible to make the children feel that, when the Abbé talks of *politeness*, and *evenness of temper*, such lessons are graceful and becoming in his mouth.—Such is my

\* It was customary with me to play while the children were drawing.

‘ answer to M. Lebrun’s reproach, relative  
‘ to what he calls *the almost total separation*  
‘ *between them and me*. Had it not been for  
‘ this unjust reproach, I should have observ-  
‘ ed that silence which I shall without diffi-  
‘ culty impose on myself in future upon this  
‘ head. And of what have these gentlemen  
‘ to complain? That they are not my inti-  
‘ mate friends? I have never yet perceived  
‘ that to inspire friendship was considered  
‘ by them as a duty of their office. In the  
‘ mean time I have made them an offer of  
‘ mine, and they have refused it.

‘ M. Lebrun farther says, that they can  
‘ neither see me nor speak to me. I see  
‘ these gentlemen every day; I dine with  
‘ them every Sunday; I sometimes go to the  
‘ play with M. Lebrun; beside all this, I  
‘ answer every thing that is written to me  
‘ in the most full and exact manner: and  
‘ yet M. Lebrun asserts that he cannot see  
‘ me, or speak to me, or impart to me his  
‘ sentiments! Surely this is a strange re-  
‘ proach. I shall conclude this explanation  
‘ by telling M. Lebrun (with the frankness  
‘ of a person who has felt and demonstrated  
‘ the truest friendship for him) that he has  
‘ been mistaken in his reckoning, because he  
‘ has suffered himself to be blindly guided  
‘ by the Abbé Guyot. Had he listened to  
‘ the dictates of his own heart, he would  
‘ have conducted himself more wisely; his  
‘ real merit was such that it is astonishing he  
‘ has not proved superior to little insigni-  
‘ ficant pretensions, and a thousand suscep-  
‘ tibilities, which I hesitate not to affirm have

‘ at

' at length altered the natural rectitude of  
 ' his understanding. Of numberless instan-  
 ' ces in which he has adopted the opinions  
 ' and language of another person I shall  
 ' quote but one, which, as well as many  
 ' others, I have avoided noticing in this  
 ' Journal. I had made a reform in the  
 ' enormous quantity of periodical publicati-  
 ' ons, for which the princes were made to  
 ' subscribe, as it was a real abuse; I said at  
 ' the same time that, having a right to the  
 ' Gazette, they should subscribe in future  
 ' only for the *Feuille de Paris*. Upon which  
 ' M. Lebrun replies in the Journal, that it  
 ' is all very well; but that he and the Abbé  
 ' would subscribe themselves for the *Mercur*,  
 ' in order that the princes might derive from  
 ' that work some idea of *politics*, and be-  
 ' come acquainted with *public affairs*. In  
 ' the first place the princes have scarcely  
 ' time to read the *Feuille de Paris*, and it  
 ' would be impossible for them to devote a  
 ' moment to the *Mercur*. Secondly, during  
 ' dinner and supper their attention is em-  
 ' ployed on Italian and English; and those  
 ' are not times that can be chosen to read to  
 ' them the political part of the work in ques-  
 ' tion. During their recreations joinery or  
 ' architecture occupies their thoughts, and  
 ' this therefore is not a fit time for talking  
 ' politics. And what other time is there to  
 ' devote to this work? Thirdly, I conceive  
 ' the *Mercur* to be not at all calculated to  
 ' give princes of their age an idea of poli-  
 ' tics. Fourthly, it is not behaving politely  
 ' to me, to tell me that a publication is  
 ' neces-

‘ necessary for the instruction of the princes,  
‘ which I had deemed useless; nor was it  
‘ becoming to add that they would pay for  
‘ the work themselves, that the princes might  
‘ have the benefit of it. Lastly, the political  
‘ part of the *Mercure*, is merely a repetition  
‘ of the Gazette, and the Gazette the  
‘ princes have regularly. M. Lebrun would  
‘ certainly not have said such things had he  
‘ been guided by himself.—To this long  
‘ article, that I may never again resume this  
‘ subject, I will add that, void of all ill-  
‘ humour, prejudice, caprice, or resentment,  
‘ I have seen, and still see, things with my  
‘ own eyes exactly as they are; that I have sufficient  
‘ firmness, experience, and knowledge  
‘ both of men and children, to be assured,  
‘ that what I have begun I shall finish with honour  
‘ and success; that I am resolved to do  
‘ at all times more for the gentlemen in question  
‘ than is due to them from their situation,  
‘ and to embrace every opportunity of serving  
‘ them, if it be attended with no inconvenience  
‘ to the education of our pupils: at the  
‘ same time I shall think it extremely strange  
‘ if this conduct do not satisfy them, and they  
‘ lay claim to an intimacy which it is not possible  
‘ should henceforth exist between us.  
‘ Esteem and politeness we are mutually bound  
‘ to shew each other, and these are all I can  
‘ hereafter grant, unless time, and a conduct  
‘ of which there is no probability, should  
‘ convince me that they have entered into my  
‘ way of thinking, and been sensible of the  
‘ reflections which their conduct has not failed  
‘ to excite in me; unless, in short, I see in  
‘ them

‘ them a sincere desire of repairing the wrongs  
‘ which have broken every tie of friendship  
‘ between us. This I do not expect; and I  
‘ have before to-day made up my mind upon  
‘ the subject. I again repeat, that but for the  
‘ strange reproach of M. Lebrun, I should  
‘ never have written this long and final expla-  
‘ nation: but it was a duty I owed to myself  
‘ to insert my justification in this Journal,  
‘ which I wish to consider as containing the  
‘ most indisputable proof of my conduct upon  
‘ all occasions, as the record of my true sen-  
‘ timents, and as a faithful picture of our at-  
‘ tention to our pupils, and our behaviour to  
‘ each other.’

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.





